

*Occult Anatomy  
and the Bible*

also

**HEALING AND DISEASE  
IN THE LIGHT OF REBIRTH  
AND THE STARS**

by

**Corinne Heline**

This volume on OCCULT ANATOMY AND THE BIBLE has been printed previously in 12 separate booklets, the first printing being in 1937. Several additional editions have been printed by the New Age Press since that time.

\* \* \*

HEALING AND DISEASE IN THE LIGHT OF REBIRTH AND THE STARS was first issued in mimeograph form by the New Age Press in 1940. It has since had several additional printings. Because of the close correlation of its subject matter with that of OCCULT ANATOMY AND THE BIBLE it is included in this volume.

\* \* \*

THE ROSICRUCIAN FELLOWSHIP PRESS  
P. O. Box 713  
Oceanside, California, U.S.A.  
Zip Code 92054

133  
H365

C O N T E N T S

PART I

Healing and Disease in the Light of Rebirth and the Stars.....	5
---	---

PART II

Foreword .....	32
Chapter 1 The Archetype or the Heavenly Pattern of the Human Body.....	34
Chapter 2 The Immaculate Conception.....	55
Chapter 3 Prenatal Adventures of Human Spirit.....	71
Chapter 4 Physiological Processes Spiritually Interpreted..	95
Chapter 5 "Ye Are the Temple of the Living God".....	116
Chapter 6 The Two Nervous Systems and Their Relationship to Spiritual Development.....	158
Chapter 7 The Etheric Body and Its Role in the Sensitization of Composite Man.....	190
Chapter 8 The Blood—An Arcane Mystery.....	231
Chapter 9 The Role of the Ductless Glands in Spiritual Attainment .....	245
Chapter 10 The Desire Body.....	275
Chapter 11 Mind, Soul, and Spirit.....	303
Chapter 12 New Birth Through Regeneration.....	335



## Part I

# Healing and Disease in the Light of Rebirth and the Stars

*If you would ask me what to study, I would say,  
yourself, and when you had studied well and  
would ask me what next to study, I would again  
reply, yourself.*

Permanent healing necessitates a removal of conditions that cause disease. Those conditions go beyond the physical, usually originating anterior to the present earth life. They have to do with the mental and emotional life of man; they are the result of some kind of disobedience, willful or ignorant, of cosmic law. This truth was made plain by Christ Jesus when He asked His disciples: "For whether is easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and walk?"

Disease is rooted in sin, and sin is deviation from the perfect law. It is not, therefore, an arbitrary punishment meted out to disobedient man by an offended Deity, but the inevitable result of violations against Nature's true and wholesome ways. Being out of harmony with the laws of life, dis-ease appears and serves as a warning to the offender that the restoration of health necessitates conformity to the divine order. In his way it becomes man's enlightener, painful only because he will not, for the most part, learn except through first-hand, sorrowful experiences. When he comes to recognize these truths and makes the necessary corrections and readjustments by which the causes of sickness are removed, the ill effects disappear and permanent healing becomes an established condition.

This truth was brought out by the Christ when healing a man of lameness. According to the record as related in John 5:5-8; 14, Christ Jesus encountered a multitude which lay sick beside the pool of Bethesda, but it appears that there was only one amongst them who received healing. This was not because Christ Jesus did not have it in His heart to make them all whole, but because He evidently discovered only one in whom He recognized a receptive spirit and the necessary faith to receive the healing which a divine ministration could bestow upon him.

And so we read that the Master told him who was healed to take up his bed and walk, and that he did so. Later, when Christ Jesus met him in the Temple, He said, "Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee"—thus reminding him that it is a violation of law, physical and spiritual, which brings on disease, whereas obedience thereto preserves wholeness.

Again, in the Gospel of John we read of the man born blind. To the query of the disciples as to the cause, the Master replied: "That the works of God (the spirit within) should be made manifest." It is through suffering, pain, and limitation that the Ego awakens to a realization of its own innate perfection.

#### THE CONSTITUTION OF MAN

The pupils of Paracelsus came to him with the question: "Tell us, O Master, what is the mystery of nature and of man? What is the mystery of disease and what are life and death?" To which the ancient sage replied: "If you would decipher man then you must understand that occult language which is revealed to the scholar, but concealed from the layman."

The occult language to which Paracelsus refers is that of the mysteries which lie hidden in the great cycles of life and whose meanings are written in the stars, therein

to be deciphered by those who have developed inner wisdom. Blessed indeed are the eyes that see and the hearts that understand something of the wonder-workings of those laws which govern nature and man.

In the light of the Western Wisdom, man is infinitely more than the externalized form contacted with the outer senses. Man possesses a chain of vehicles all of which, the physical body alone excepted, are invisible to ordinary sight; but which are nevertheless present, interpenetrating one another and functioning actively in maintaining the composite form through which the Spirit manifests on this physical plane. When any maladjustment occurs between any of these several vehicles, the result is a disorder of some kind in mind or body, or both. The nature and the degree of the dislocations determine the nature and the degree of the resultant disease. To diagnose a disease perfectly is to lay bare the imperfect alignment between the bodies of man, visible and invisible. Therefore, the true physician, as Paracelsus observes, studies the invisible man more earnestly than he does the visible.

The body of man is threefold. It comprises the physical body, the vital body (which is its etheric counterpart) and the desire or astral body. These three interpenetrating vehicles are connected to the threefold Spirit or Ego by the link of mind, the mental vehicle.

The Ego has its seat in the head at the root of the nose and uses the blood as its special vehicle; the specialized physical vehicle of the etheric body is the glandular system; that of the desire body is the nervous system.

The deep and hidden causes which lie behind the mystery of disease and healing—the origin of and reason for various infirmities, the length of their duration, and many other equally interesting problems connected with this subject—can be satisfactorily solved for the occultist only in the light of the twin Laws of Rebirth and Consequence.

## PRENATAL CONDITIONS

We will be greatly helped to a more adequate understanding of the complexity and profundity of our subject by first considering the prenatal conditions under which an Ego works preparatory to entering upon another incarnation in a new physical body. This initial work commences with the creation of the archetype in the likeness of which the physical body is formed. This living, vibrating, celestial pattern determines the size, form, and general appearance of the body; also, the length of the life span.

The quality and strength of the archetype, be it well remembered, are dependent upon the Ego's previous earth lives. It is formed of the life forces generated in the past by the Spirit itself, these forces being a synthesized extract of the individual's previous earth experiences. When an earth life has been lived under limited, negative, and inharmonious conditions—and this would include all manner of lack, evil, and disease—the essences drawn therefrom will be of corresponding quality. Since it is out of this essence that the new archetype is formed, it will be composed of elements generated in the past and the fruits of which reappear in the next physical body used by the Ego.

We have but to observe the average human vehicle to realize how unwisely humanity as a whole has treated its physical instruments and how little it recognizes thoughts and deeds as causative factors of health or disease in its body. As a man thinks, so is he. The law of reaping as we sow obtains on all planes of being. We are what we are because of what we have been, and we can be what we will to be when we come into a realization of the creative power of thought and acquire the ability to direct it as we will. There is no limitation placed upon man but that which he imposes upon himself. When people generally have come to accept understandingly the Law of Rebirth from this viewpoint, a new and emancipated race, a race



that will truly be "heirs and joint heirs with Christ," will come into being.

The Law of Rebirth, which decrees that an Ego returns to earth life again and again until all the lessons of the material plane have been learned, its possibilities fully explored, and its powers completely mastered, is sometimes misinterpreted by those who have not looked fully into the subject as imposing unnecessary limitations on the Spirit of man. But rightly understood, the Law of Rebirth comes as a liberating truth pointing the way to repeated opportunities for the exercise of our God-given faculties until these be unfolded to their divine fullness in accordance with the ordered processes of evolving life as these operate on all planes of being throughout the universe. It is the Law of Rebirth that enables man to become, indeed, the "master of his fate and captain of his soul."

#### STELLAR HARMONICS

Sometime we shall all know that evolution progresses in harmony with the musical scale and that each incarnating Spirit responds in soul measures to one of the Seven Spirits before the Throne of God, or astrologically speaking, the seven planets in our solar system. (Esoterically only seven planets are native to our system.) The planet to which the Ego is keyed determines the rhythm of the archetype, which in turn transmits this same dominant note to the vehicles making up the personality (*persona*, mask) through which the Spirit functions during earth life. Although one planetary note is paramount, the blended tones of the other six also operate in forming the celestial fabric. The planetary bodies are vehicles of indwelling Planetary Spirits, and as their physical motion is continuous, so, too, is the activity of the Spirits ensouling them. Their radiations influence everything within the sphere of their operations from the most minute atom to

the largest orb within our solar system. How much of this influence the Ego can receive and build into its life pattern depends upon its development, which in turn is determined by the quality and the quantity of the experience garnered into soul growth during previous incarnating cycles.

When, for instance, the high note of a trine between the Sun and Neptune is sounded in the heavens, if the Spirit has not yet awakened the latent qualities making it capable of responding to this lofty inspirational impulse which, when appropriated and made manifest in the individual life, leads to the exalted state we speak of as initiation, nothing whatsoever of consequence happens in terms of consciousness. The effect of this failure to respond when such a tone was sounded will be an absence of such planetary tendency in the archetype of the next embodiment. If, by way of further example, a person reacts to the forces of a square between the same two planets, and experiences its effects in conditions of negative psychism and mediumship, tendencies to remanifest those conditions will appear in the next earth life. If the temptations to yield to negativity under such an aspect be mastered, and consciousness raised to levels where it maintains itself untouched by the undesirable manifestation of the square, a similar aspect will not have to be met in the next earth life. If it has not been mastered it will reappear, since the weakness remains to be overcome. Earth life is a school, and the Planetary Spirits before the Throne are among our celestial teachers. They do not compel us to live thus or so, but they do impel us to live in harmony with their ordered ways and in obedience to the laws of universal good.

As is our life, so is the signature of the stars. If this truth be borne carefully in mind, the erroneous conception held by the uninformed that astrology implies fatalism is forever removed. Whatever be the design formed by the lines of force which we have admitted and directed within our being, it is impressed upon our present archetype and

will be transferred from it to the next. This pattern is reflected in our physical body where it is expressed as health or disease, depending on whether the forces have been drawn into patterns of beauty and harmony or of ugliness and discord.

From the self-created penalties following the misdirection of forces, or to speak astrologically, from the misfortune of malefic stellar aspects, man frees himself when he learns the ways of divine laws and lives in obedience to them. Liberation from the bondage of "bad aspects" comes with the awakening of the Christ within. The illumination that follows such an awakening leads to a life of love and beauty: lines of discord disappear from the archetype, and in due course their reflected dis-ease in the physical body also disappears. The released powers of the Christ within also strengthen the rhythm of the archetype, giving to the body added physical vigor and sometimes a prolongation of life. Those who honor their father and mother, that is, those who live in obedience to the laws of their Creator, are promised length of days. An example of life prolonged may be cited in the biblical character of good King Hezekiah.

#### MUSIC IN RELATION TO WELL-BEING

As previously stated, evolution proceeds in harmony with the rhythms of the musical scale. The tone of the particular planet to which an Ego is attuned sets the keynote of the archetype; and later, when the embryonic vital sheath is placed by the Angels within the body of the expectant mother, it is set to the same musical key as that sounding in the archetype.

The physical envelope is moulded into an exact replica of the vital body, the medium for the inflow of the vitalizing life force. The physical body, therefore, is also built in harmony with this same musical rhythm. When this fact is recognized, it becomes clear how the harmonious relationship of the Ego with its bodies means health, and

how a dissonance between it and its vehicles produces disease.

Over-exhaustion, anger, emotional excess of any kind, rich and heavy foods taken in excess, all have a tendency to lower the initial tone of the vital body and thus disturb the "musical balance" of the entire organism. Bodies are then more easily susceptible to inharmonious reactions and such weaknesses as exist in the archetype are most liable to reappear. What these are will be seen in the radical horoscope of a person's nature since this is in truth a picture of the soul. Wherever squares and oppositions are found, disharmony is most likely to appear. A scientific analysis of all factors involved points to the nature of a mental or physical ailment that is likely to manifest. Remember, however, that the awakened Christ within can lift man above these inscribed lines of causation.

As we realize that disease is really a musical inharmony—"sweet bells jangled, out of tune," as the poet put it—we also begin to understand something of the tremendous part that music will assume in the healing practice of the future. If every person were sufficiently sensitized to be able to rise in consciousness to where he could listen to his own particular keynote, the words of the Master, "Physician, heal thyself," would bear a new and more far-reaching significance. But since this is not possible, other methods must be employed in the meantime.

Relief from disease comes as the rhythm of the vital body is raised and strengthened. Health or harmony is permanently restored when the lines of harmony are definitely re-established within the archetype. Thus we see how inadequate pills and powders become in the light of this understanding, and how essential is the power of spiritual thinking and the transformed mind as advocated by the great Christian metaphysician, Paul.

One of the most potent means of lifting the tone of the vital body is by the use of spiritual affirmations. Many portions of the Bible are particularly efficacious in this

work, the Twenty-third Psalm and the first chapter of John's Gospel being familiar and notable examples. Certain music, a poem, or excerpts from a well-loved book, are also helpful in producing the required result.

If we would be immune to disease, it is necessary that the practice of lifting the consciousness to a point where it contacts the "tone" of spirit must be performed faithfully at regular intervals, preferably in the early morning hours and at night on retiring. It is best to use consistently the same affirmation, as in time every atom of our bodies, both visible and invisible, will respond instantaneously to the "tone" of the affirmation used.

Deep, rhythmic, harmonious breathing is also an important factor in the rehabilitation of both inner and outer man. Breath is fundamental to physical life, and as we learn to ascend in consciousness we shall also learn to breathe in the powers of the Holy Spirit; this will enable us to transcend the limitations of disease and even to conquer that last of all enemies, death itself.

#### DISEASE CLASSIFICATIONS

All forms of disease may be divided into two classes, namely, chronic and acute. A study of disease in the light of rebirth has shown that mental weaknesses in one life usually react as physical infirmities in the next; and contrariwise, that physical abuses take their after-toll in mental disabilities. Mistaken attitudes of mind, whatever they may be, build lines of force into the seed atoms of the desire and mental bodies, from which they are later transferred to or "set" in the archetype. From the archetype they are, in turn, transmitted to the Ego's next vital and physical bodies where they will appear as lines of in-harmony or disease, either chronic or acute. There they remain until the indwelling Spirit has learned the lesson imposed by the infirmity. The cause will then be removed, after which the effect will permanently disappear. Any form of healing that does not remove the cause is obviously

impermanent. Every true healer endeavors to awaken within the patient a realization of his own innate divinity. In the degree the patient realizes his inner powers and utilizes them rightly does he demonstrate health and wholeness of mind and body. Were we able to observe the subtler interpenetrating vehicles of the composite man, we would see the processes of restoration going on simultaneously in the entire chain of vehicles, from those within to those outside the physical.

There are four elements from which all things are composed. These elements are called Fire, Air, Water, and Earth. All diseases may be classed under one or another of these four headings. For instance, infirmities caused by alcoholic indulgence, cancers, and fevers are of a fiery nature. Mental aberrations and diseases caused by the excessive use of drugs, come under the airy element. Malformed bodies and abnormal growths belong to the earthy element. Diseases of the stomach, digestive tract, and the assimilative and glandular systems are associated with the watery element.

#### ASTROLOGICAL AFFINITIES

There are four fundamental types of persons correlating with the twelve zodiacal signs. These twelve signs may be subdivided into four groups of three each, according to the element to which they belong. They make up what we speak of astrologically as the four triplicities. A healer will be most successful in dealing with ailments that come under the same element as does his ruling sign. The physician who comes under the fiery sign Leo, for instance, will have greater ability for curing patients who are under a sign of a compatible element and for healing ailments belonging to the fiery element. Most healers, if not all, of every school, regardless of whether or not they recognize the astrological factors, admit they are more successful in treating some patients, and in healing some types

of disease, than others. The key to this is to be found in a common element linking healer and patient together, and also the third factor, the ailment to be cured. These are the facts that lead to specialization, even though they are as yet unknown to the average practitioner making such choice.

A healer with the Sun in the fiery, cardinal sign Aries will be most successful in the treatment of acute diseases; one with the Sun in the fiery, fixed sign Leo, in chronic maladies; one with the Sun in the fiery, mutable sign Sagittarius will serve most effectively as a nurse. Similarly, a healer coming under the earth ray will prove most successful with the type of disease governed by his ruling sign. If that be Capricorn, it will be acute maladies; if Taurus, chronic; and if Virgo, the healing that comes chiefly from nursing. Under the airy ray, Gemini governs acute illnesses; Aquarius, chronic; Libra, the nurse. Under the watery ray, Pisces, acute; Scorpio, chronic; Cancer, the nurse.

As we come closer to the cooperative age of airy Aquarius, healing groups will be established to work along specialized lines determined by fundamental fitness as this is ascertainable by reference to the science of the stars. This knowledge will be applied in schools of healing, in hospitals, and in the general practice of healing. There will be formed healing groups of twelve, or multiples thereof, in which the combined and properly proportioned forces of all the twelve zodiacal signs will become operative to a degree of efficiency not possible short of such organization. Such a group will become a power as a group, and each individual in it, working intelligently along his own specialized ray, will function with enhanced ability as a result of his coordination with fellow practitioners possessing complementary forces which, in their completeness, serve the whole of man and nature. The results of such concerted efforts will be so remarkable and far-reaching that many who come to scoff will remain to praise.

## MACROCOSM AND MICROCOSM

Man is a microcosmic universe. The laws which govern the starry spheres apply equally to the bodies of man. Every atom in the universe and in man is in continuous rotation. In health the movement is from left to right; in disease, from right to left. Positive, constructive thinking also produces the clockwise motion; negative, destructive thinking, counter-clockwise. Viewed clairvoyantly, any abnormal growth in the body is seen to be composed of atoms rotating negatively and out of harmony with the keynote of the vital body.

The strong constructive thought of a healer, reinforced by appropriate affirmations on the part of both healer and patient, has the power to reverse this motion, and thereby disintegrate the diseased atoms, after which comes the restoration to health.

Dr. Alexis Carrel, in his richly informative and illuminating work, *Man, the Unknown*, observes that "science studies intensely man's liver, kidneys, and all his physical functions—everything except the only important function, which is thought."

Life is vibration. It is the Eternal Essence manifesting at a certain rate of motion. When the vibratory rate falls below a given point, disease is the result, and when it falls still lower, death ensues. At that point the forces of disintegration overtake those of attraction and cohesion. Vibration offers the key to the secrets of health and disease, of youth and age, of death and its eventual surrender to immortal life.

## THE BURDEN OF FEAR

People suffer greatly today from contagious diseases. Repeated epidemics take their toll of tens of millions. Fear plays an important part at such times. Where the disease itself takes the lives of hundreds, it is perhaps true that fear claims victims by the thousands. Thought becomes very obviously the most important factor of cure and



control under such situations. If people recognized the importance of Dr. Carrel's statement quoted above, and gave attention to the power of thought, the problem of contagion would be largely solved. Fear is paralyzing in its effects. It slows down the motion of the atoms of both the mental and the physical bodies. The rhythmic harmony between the several vehicles is disturbed with the inevitable result of dis-ease of some kind.

When an epidemic sweeps over a city the psychic atmosphere takes on a leaden aspect; it is grey and heavy with the accumulated fear thoughts of the masses. The glaring headlines in the daily papers add to the scare. By stirring up emotions of fear through screaming aloud the numbers who are ill and the fatalities as they increase, added numbers succumb. This alone is a sinister influence of tremendous power. It is largely responsible for lowering the consciousness of a community in time of an epidemic to such an extent that it becomes a task of major proportions for the average individual to rise above it. How truly Job spoke for multitudes of others when he exclaimed: "That which I feared hath come upon me."

When these facts are known and acted upon, effective measures can be taken to avoid fear and remain immune to contagion. Let the mind remain faithfully centered in Truth, and in calm and in confidence meditate on the divine power within that is available whenever called into action. Use such affirmations as strengthen poise and faith. The Twenty-third and the Ninety-first Psalms have magical power for alleviating fear. Let these rhythms enter into the very recesses of the subconscious mind by repetition and by meditation upon their divine assurances. Avoid reading about disease or discussing the subject unnecessarily, never negatively. Refuse to permit any of its lurid details to be pictured upon your mind. The image-building faculty of mind (imagination) is one of its most powerful tools. It may be used constructively or destructively. It can rebuild a broken body or tear down a healthy one.

The power to do one or the other lies within ourselves.

It is also to be noted in this connection that in accordance with the law of retributive justice those who, knowingly or ignorantly, implant fears of contagion during epidemics in the hearts of individuals or communities, become the victims of their own unfortunate sowing in this or in another life.

### HEREDITARY DISEASES

Hereditary diseases can be rightly understood only in the light of rebirth. The Law of Heredity is the counterpart of the spiritual Law of Rebirth. When strained to include facts explicable only by a reference to the latter law, it becomes a fallacy. The average individual attributes to heredity powers not belonging to it. This is one of the many limiting misconceptions that have yet to be outgrown.

While it is true that parents supply the physical atoms for building the infant body of an incoming Ego, and that a pure body cannot be provided by parents whose bodies are charged with poisons and disease, it must never be forgotten that the incarnating Ego need not remain subject to such limitations. It possesses the power to nullify every negative condition passed on to it under the Law of Heredity. It can remake its physical body atom for atom. As for the qualities of character, these are not the product of heredity or environment. They belong to the individual soul, and the soul is the child of its own previous creation. The reason it receives by heredity an imperfect body is due to its own causation; it has broken laws of God and nature in the past and therefore finds itself in physical imperfection until such time as it ceases such violations and obeys the law of health and harmony. No time limit is placed on when this may occur. It is whenever the Ego chooses to leave the path of pain for ways of lasting joy. That time may be *now*.

Where similarity of character between parents and children would appear to indicate that heredity applied,

the most obvious fact disproving such a conclusion is the number of cases of extreme dissimilarity. The explanation for the similarity is the Law of Attraction that normally brings together Egos of approximately like development and of similar tastes and interests.

An Ego comes into earth life carrying with it in latency all the powers and abilities that it has acquired in past lives, together with such increment as it has added during its period in the inner worlds between the last earth life and the one upon which it next enters. The time between earth lives is not one of idleness; it is one of intense, purposeful activity. Normally, growth and progress are continuous and uninterrupted. The body in which the Ego will function will be built, as previously stated, of materials supplied by the parents. The quality of that material will be in accordance with the individual's past causation. If in past lives he has incorporated lines of discord or weakness, or tendencies to certain diseases into his body they will exist in his present archetype, and by the Law of Attraction he will gravitate to parents who will supply materials of similar nature. Thus, the Ego will fashion a body susceptible to certain specific weaknesses but in accordance with causes set up in past lives by himself, not because he chanced to meet the misfortune of a parentage over which he had no control. To believe the latter would be to deny the existence of justice in the world and to affirm that we incarnate, well or ill, good or bad, by caprice and not according to desert. It were to deny the operation of natural law in the moral sphere and the supervision of a Divine Father—He Who *is* Love and no respecter of persons, who provides equal opportunity for all His children to become perfect even as He is perfect.

In addition to the general Law of Attraction which brings similarly stationed individuals into family, community, and racial groups, there are usually specific ties of an intimate nature from the past that link individuals together in family relationships. There are causations to be

reaped; pleasant fruits to be harvested, grievous debts to be paid—most frequently something of both.

Let it be repeated again—for it cannot be repeated too often—that it is not to be inferred from the above that we are helplessly bound by the past. The unfortunate links forged under the Law of Causation between people may be severed by entering into a realization of the truth that sets us free. The chains of past causation and the bonds of heredity hold us only so long as we permit them to do so.

“We are in bondage under the law (material thinking); we are free in Christ (spiritual realization).”

### HYPNOTISM

The practice of hypnotism carries serious consequences both to the practitioner and his subjects. It involves interference with the free will of an Ego. The hypnotist projects his own mind into the brain of another and makes the victim subject to his will. Even where this is done with the unselfish purpose of freeing a person of an enslaving habit of drugs or liquor it is not justifiable. The cure is not permanent until the sufferer himself has conquered the weakness, and, therefore, when a hypnotist cures the body by ejecting the will of the Ego, using it and supplanting it with his own will power, he has merely deprived the Ego of the opportunity to learn the lesson that it must some day master. The immediate seeming gain is really a loss. The lesson to be learned has been delayed; also, the will power of the victim has been weakened by the process.

Free will is an Ego's most priceless heritage during this earth pilgrimage; for another person to supplant that will with his own or in any way to weaken it, even though the motives for doing so be of the highest, is to bring upon himself disastrous consequences. By the power of the will the Ego mounts the ladder of evolution that leads to Godhood. That will is weakened in the individual who submits to hypnotism, in which state the will of the

hypnotist brings the will of the hypnotized completely under his domination. But a person cannot be put "under the spell" if his own will is more positive than that of the hypnotist.

When control over another is for the purpose of idle amusement or in order to gain some selfish advantage, the consequences of the wrong are yet more serious. There are none more so. Those who surrender their will to another have the task of regaining the will power that has been lost. Those who have victimized others will be called upon under the Law of Justice to assist their victims to regain their weakened powers. They are also liable to serious physical infirmities in future embodiments. Such is the frequent fate of a professional hypnotist. Through a mishapen, useless body the Spirit will learn the enormity of the wrong of making another's body helpless by substituting his own will for that of its rightful occupant.

The widespread practice of hypnotism in our time, together with the flood of literature favorable to the subject, is another evidence of the disintegrating forces that are threatening to overtake our civilization and bring about its collapse. Integrity in the full meaning of that word is the great need of our time—integrity in our personal and public life, integrity in commercial, professional, and governmental life. Man must become a harmoniously, unified functioning being before he can build a successful life and so become a sound unit in the upbuilding of a healthy community, a wholesome culture and an enduring civilization.

#### MENTAL ILLNESS

Medical science is far less materialistic today than it was in the last century. It is confronted with facts that are compelling it to recognize that it must learn how to minister to diseased minds no less than to diseased bodies. The nature and behavior of the psyche or soul has become an object of extensive medical research, and has so far

developed as to have given rise to psychiatry as a recognized branch of medical practice. While the psyche is still popularly regarded as a term pertaining to mind only and not to the higher vehicle of the soul, yet the direction of medical scientific thought is steadily moving away from the former material concepts which regarded man solely as a physical being and is now coming gradually to an acceptance of man's composite nature as taught in both religious doctrines and occult science.

The pressure of the facts of every-day life is compelling the reluctant admission from hitherto confirmed materialists that mind is superior to matter and that cures call for more than drugs. The untold number of mental cases that are now being treated in hospitals in the United States alone, together with another vast number of unhospitalized cases estimated at anywhere from seven to fourteen million, have of necessity called forth a new and rapidly growing class of healers that we have come to know as psychiatrists, or mind-therapists. The next logical development in the healing ministry will be the restoration of the healing that combined religion and science as practiced by the priest-physician—the chief of whom was the Lord Christ, the Healer of Healers, who came to earth that men might be restored to wholeness and well-being.

Mental diseases are of many kinds and gradations. The most prevalent is psychoneurosis, or neurosis for short. This is characterized by conflicting emotions and bad adjustment to environment. There is wanting a proper integration of body, mind, and soul. The several principles, or bodies, of the outer and the inner man have fallen out of perfect alignment and hence fail at times to function as a unit. There is a split—hence the expression “split personality,” or schizophrenia, as it is technically termed. This has been defined as a split between the sense of the actual and the ideal, the state of mind of one who is unable to face certain unpleasant realities and so withdraws into an unreal world of his own.

## INSANITY AND OBSESSION

More serious is the mental ailment formerly called just plain insanity but in the new terminology of our day as psychosis. The mental derangement of those so afflicted is due to various causes and conditions. One type of insanity is spoken of in medical terms as multi-personality, or obsession, in which the mind is said to leave its normal track at times for some reason not yet known to material medical practice. It is a type of insanity that was formerly pronounced incurable, and consequently its sufferers were committed to mental institutions for life. However, in the decade of the thirties a form of treatment was discovered which in many instances proved highly efficacious. This is known as the "shock treatment" since, by the use of electricity, insulin, or metrazol, the patient is subjected to a series of shocks as strong as can be taken. In this way it has been found that patients have at times been jolted back to normal. To be thrown into "the snake pit" is but another form of administering such a shock. It was a theory among medieval medics that since a shock of this type was enough to drive a sane person mad it should also have the power of shocking a mad mind back to normality.

There is truth here as the occultist well knows. In the case of multiple personality an alien Ego has entered into a body that is not its own by ejecting the rightful owner. Hence, the body is used by two (or more) entities. While material science repudiates this "devil theory," as it is termed, it does recognize shock treatments as driving out something; or at any rate, as effecting some sort of rearrangement in the patient's mental mechanism. The occultist, on the other hand, sees it as a means by which an intruding entity is forced to loosen its hold upon the etheric body of the victim and thereby turn the body over to its rightful owner, at least partially or for a brief period. The fact is that the obsessing entity's hold is gradually weakened by repeated treatments of this kind,

and in some cases complete cures have been effected.

Obsessions may be divided into two classes, elemental and demoniacal. The former is more common. It is generally caused by self-abuse in previous lives. Such a practice, if long continued, produces an extremely nervous, negative condition which makes the subject an easy prey to elementals of earth, water and air. It was this form of insanity that the Supreme Physician healed when He cast out obsessing entities from afflicted human beings and sent them into swine which, when so possessed, rushed headlong into the sea and were drowned. Swine symbolize the bestial elements in man's nature that must be driven out to cleanse his house for the return of its rightful occupant.

All demoniacal obsessions are directly traceable to the practice of some form of black magic in the past. By black magic is meant any practice that in any way enslaves another being, or that limits the free will of an individual. As previously pointed out, there is no greater crime than this. The perpetrator of such wrongs pays heavily in pain and sorrow until he has learned the enormity of his sins.

Treatment of demoniacal obsession, which is alarmingly prevalent in these modern times, requires a healer who is highly spiritual and who possesses extended vision. Unfortunately, such healers are few. So our asylums continue to be overcrowded with cases pronounced incurable. This disorder is frequently referred to in the Bible as the possession of devils.

Persons suffering from obsession forfeit benefits they would normally receive from their earthly experience to the extent that they are deprived of the use of their own bodies. Yet it is not all loss. The agony they suffer as the result of their expulsion writes itself into their soul. After they have contemplated from the inner world the psychological crimes they committed that brought upon them such a tragic calamity, the voice of conscience will speak loudly to them in future lives, warning against a repetition of those sins.



## EUTHANASIA

The question sometimes arises as to the justification of taking the life of an individual who begs to be relieved from a body that renders him incapable of even the slightest self-help. From the point of view of a single earth life, arguments in its favor may seem altogether plausible. But in the light of rebirth and causation, this is a wrong that cannot be condoned. It would solve no problem. The Ego must be born again and yet again in an equally helpless body until the import of past misdeeds has been learned. This is not the arbitrary edict of a vengeful Deity; it is the inexorable working of the Law of eternal Justice. It is the way of progress. "Be not deceived; God is not mocked; for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap."

## BLOOD

The blood is the direct channel of the Spirit within the body of man. It contains the deepest secrets of life. A "blood tie" means a bond that is indissoluble; it can be severed only through a Spirit's final release from its body. This fact was borne out by an interesting press report about a man who had given of his blood to a considerable number of persons requiring transfusions. He stated that whenever one whom he had so served died, he was immediately aware of the passing and also saw the likeness of the departed. What he saw was not merely a likeness, but the disembodied Spirit itself.

In the case of blood transfusions great care should be exercised to secure the proper blood type and a donor belonging astrologically to the same element as the patient. A patient coming under a fire sign should accept blood only from a donor who comes under either a fire or an air sign: a water patient should draw on someone belonging to an earth or water sign; an air patient, from a fire or air donor; an earth patient from one coming under a water or an earth sign.

Two persons coming into such an intimate relationship as the mixing of blood usually do so in liquidation of some debt incurred in the past. One who frequently gives his blood in this manner is probably atoning for blood he has shed, perhaps in the course of wars of ruthless aggression. In the case of a person highly sensitized through clean and holy living, extra precautions are necessary for otherwise the reactions may be serious or even fatal. In such a case it is desirable to obtain blood from one who abstains from meat, tobacco, and alcoholic liquors. Where the vibratory rate of the newly infused blood varies too greatly from that of the patient, the Ego may not be able to reconcile the difference and bring the "alien" life—for "the life is in the blood"—under its complete control, in which event derangement, or even death, is the result.

#### THE FOUR ELEMENTS

Every infirmity is connected with one of the four elements. Poisons are of fiery origin and center in the desire body. Poison is rendered harmless to one's body when his lower desires have been transmuted. Hence, the Master's statement to his disciples: "They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them."

All fermentations operate in the fiery ray. Alcoholic beverages have the ultimate effect of making man a slave to his desire nature and an abject tool of the Lucifers. The house of prayer (body) becomes the den of thieves (destructive poisons). One of the darkest causations the nations of the world will have to meet is the result of extensive indulgence in alcoholic liquors. Those who engage in the manufacture and distribution of intoxicants, or who are in any way responsible for its traffic, will not escape the deleterious effects which the habit of strong drink has had upon the race. They will one day have to share in bearing the burden of racial reclamation, the need for which they had a part in creating.

Epidemics are largely a reaction from collective wrongs committed in the past. The ten millions, or thereabouts, who went out from this plague in 1919-20 suffered a sudden reaction from the mass crimes of the World War. We cannot take the lives of our brothers and charge the atmosphere with destructive thoughts of hate, murder and revenge—far greater in power than poison gas—without its resulting in a heavy toll of misery and death.

Cholera, black plague, and smallpox are more prevalent among primitive people than in more enlightened races. They are occultly attributable in large part to voodoo practices, black magic, incantations, and other means used to subordinate the mind of one person to another without the former's knowledge or against his will.

In the words of a sage, the weaknesses of the soul proclaim the frailties of the body. Upon the seed atom, located in the left ventricle of the heart, is engraven an unalterable record of man's life. By this record is he judged and his destiny fixed—a fact which prompted the Psalmist to sing: "Your heart shall live forever."

#### SPIRITUAL CAUSATION OF PHYSICAL DISABILITIES

Since the outer reflects the inner, it is to the latter we must look for the ultimate cause of whatever manifests in the physical body. These causes are not ascertainable by one examining a physical body only, but may be discerned by one capable of investigating the conditions of the subtler bodies. To go farther back into causes of the effects found in these subtle bodies one must possess spiritual powers for reading the Memory of Nature, wherein is recorded everything from the beginning of time.

Research into the hidden side of health and disease throws an amazing light on the science of healing. From among numberless facts revealed, a few may be cited by way of illustration.

Clear spiritual perception will express itself outwardly as perfect physical sight. A persistent refusal to see

truth when presented ends in blindness. Far-sightedness comes from having overlooked opportunities to serve, and of living in the future to the neglect of the present. Of short-sightedness an esoteric rabbi writes: "Wherefore the limitation of short-sighted vision if it were not for peering into other people's affairs, else why the punishment laid on innocent eyes and ears?" A warped mental viewpoint, if maintained long enough, will produce a distortion of physical vision.

Similar reasons account for deafness as for loss of sight. Persistently close the ears to words of truth and the time will come when a spoken truth will fall on ears unable to hear.

An impediment in speech betokens blasphemy, false testimony, or malicious gossip in the past. Words may slay or injure; the reaction from such is impaired speech, or even total dumbness. The betrayal of a sacred trust or the violation of a vow may later cost the betrayer an injury to the tongue or, in more serious cases, its complete loss.

Most people suffer more or less from imperfect teeth. They are seldom retained in perfect condition to the end of a full life span. The hidden cause for such loss is the identification in consciousness of oneself with the ephemeral things of life. When consciousness is transferred from the transient to unchangeable reality, the change will be reflected in conditions of relative stability and permanency in the physical body.

Heart afflictions result from misplaced affections. The following has been told humorously, but the ailing young man spoke more truly than he knew. Upon being told by a physician that he had a bad heart, that he was troubled with angina pectoris, he agreed with the doctor but insisted that that was not her name! Heartaches do come from too many loves. A wanton spilling of affection means a later heart leakage. An intense personal love, directed to a single individual at the expense of any regard for others where such regard is due, has the effect of con-

tracting the heart and giving rise to cardiac disorders. The heart, the center for the love principle, suffers when this principle is in any way subverted from its highest expression. "As a man thinketh in his heart, so is he."

Ailments of arms and shoulders result from evading the responsibilities of life and relegating them to others. The hands present, even more than the countenance, indices to character, ability, and development. They reveal the nature and quality of past thought and action. Being a direct expression of the mind, they develop as does the thinker. Compare the hands of mindless anthropoids with those of rational man. The thumb, index to will, wisdom, and activity, is undeveloped in the apes. Even that of a giant gorilla is smaller than a man's little finger, and its opposable action is negligible.

The hands, like the mind which they express in action, are ruled by Mercury. The little finger is specifically ruled by this planet. When the mind is warped the little finger is curved. It is so in congenital imbeciles.

An Ego born without one or both hands has thus lost their use for an entire life as a result of having used them unscrupulously—as a surgeon who has committed heartless experiments or a soldier guilty of hideous atrocities. Fingers may be lost as a consequence of pilfering, cheating, gambling, or other dishonest practices.

Maimed feet are a reflex from leading others into paths of wrong-doing. "It were better for him that a millstone were hung about his neck . . . than that he should offend one of these little ones."

Disabilities of the generative organs result from a misuse of the holy creative life force; also from criminal interference with normal processes as in forced abortions, for instance. To suffer the extraction of the spinal fluid, a delicate and dangerous process, is the effect of misuse in any one of many ways of this precious life substance, and of victimizing others by means of the power it contains. The liver is the seat of the desire body; consequently, its

numerous afflictions are traceable to various forms of unholy desires and selfish motivations.

Stomach troubles come from having lived to eat rather than eating to live. The gormandizer becomes the dyspeptic. Further removed, the cause lies in the higher faculties. He who simply gathers facts, who accumulates knowledge to satiety, does for his mind what overeating does for his stomach. To fail to assimilate knowledge and to use it with a purpose becomes the hidden cause of intestinal troubles. As the mind has neglected to select wisely and use purposefully the knowledge it gathered, so the intestines fail in the selective process of absorbing needful elements for the body's upkeep and rejecting all that is useless and superfluous. The relation may be noted astrologically, Virgo being the sign of discrimination ruling the intestinal tract.

The modern scourge of cancer belongs to the destructive fiery element and has its center in the desire body. Its origin can be traced back occultly to a time when unbridled desires held sway. The ancient scourge of leprosy had its origin in a like causation. Paralysis comes from a lack of compassion in the past. It is the physical limitation growing out of indifference to either the joys or sorrows of others. The unmoved Spirit brings the body to a like state. Tuberculosis is the effect of materialistic thinking and living. Hardened thoughts produce hardened tissue. Dropsy results from the habitual tendency to exaggerate. Diseases directly attributable to impurity of the blood spring from sensual, poisonous, destructive thinking. Tumors and cysts are physical manifestations of a hoarding, grasping, selfish nature.

Morphine belongs to the airy element and sets its destructive rhythms primarily in the mentality. Many cases of insanity may be traced to excessive use of drugs in the past. Among cases pronounced "hopelessly incurable" are those who have led others into this devastating habit. Crippled bodies often follow past cruelties inflicted

upon man or beast—as, for instance, the terrible atrocities of the Inquisition and the sufferings to which animals are subjected in vivisection laboratories. High motive does not nullify the action of the law. The reaping will be as the sowing in each and every aspect of the act. Noble purpose will react in a refinement and a strengthening of character; cruelty involved as a result of an unbalanced or undeveloped nature will react on the physical organism in a blemish equally unnatural. The law is exact and inexorable. Where the body is helplessly crippled it is probable that the Ego once occupied a position of power which he misused by condemning others to unspeakable tortures.

Lines of causation reach into the far past and bind the living forces of our every word and deed into the crystallized substance of our present bodily habitation and environment. If, therefore, we are not pleased with our present condition, we will do well to remember that we have, by our own thought and action in the past, made ourselves what we are today; and that more intelligent thought and action today will make for us a better tomorrow. No external influence is responsible for our limitations; neither can any outward being or influence deter our progress toward perfection if we will it otherwise. *The Spirit within is the only monitor of man's fate.* In it is resident all power. The regeneration of one's nature and the illumination of one's Spirit proceed together.

Thought is the great regenerating power. "Be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind." admonished Paul. And again, "Glorify God in your body." Here we have the two fundamental healing affirmations given by one of the supreme physicians of all times.

To know continuous, radiant health is to live in constant communion with the divinity within. In this relationship lies freedom from every tie of past causation. This was the teaching of the Christ and of all illumined ones who have come after Him, regardless of time, place, or creed.

## Part II

### FOREWORD

The average individual little realizes the profound truth of the Bible statement that man is fearfully and wonderfully made. He is indeed an epitome of the universe, and a god in the making.

It is the purpose of this series of studies to examine the human organism in its arcane aspects and to present facts, substantiated in the Holy Scriptures that will reveal somewhat of the body's divine design and celestial relationships. Frequent reference will be made to the seer-physician and prince of medieval alchemists, Paracelsus, whose knowledge and understanding of the construction of the body-temple of man, together with the life processes connected therewith, still remains pre-eminent in the alchemical field. The central motif of his life and works is contained in these words: "Commune with Nature, God's signature, and go within to find the riches of the kingdom of Heaven. This is the path of True Wisdom."

We know of no more admirable foreword to a discussion of occult anatomy than the instructions which Paracelsus gave to his disciples on the three greatest books.

"I am content with three books from which I may learn very great wisdom. The first is the Book of Nature, written not with ink or stylus, but with the fingers of God; wherein are inscribed and registered Heaven, Earth, and all creation therein, through the sacred impress of the Three in One; which volume is called Macrocosmus.

"The second, a small book, which with all its leaves and pieces is taken from the larger work, and this is man himself; the same also is the Microcosmus.

"God has further ordered that man have a twofold magnet, one composed of three elements (his body) and hence also he attracts them to himself. Another one is of



the stars by which he attracts the stars. Therefore, the Reason of man has a magnet which attracts into itself the mind and thoughts of the stars. The third magnet is hidden in the image of God in man's soul.

“The third Book is the Holy Bible, the Holy Writ of the Old and the New testaments, which explains to us the two preceding Books.

“Generous friends, from these three Books we can, by the grace of God and the Holy Spirit, learn that which will profit us in body and in soul for time and eternity, and avoid many deceitful books of which the world is full.”

In a study of occult anatomy we must consider man both prior to his birth in a physical body and subsequent to the dissolution of that body at death. The Spirit is immortal and its activity is ceaseless. It goes on uninterruptedly whether it functions on this plane or on others, in a physical body or in forms of finer texture. Before the Spirit's advent on earth in a physical body it undergoes a long period of preparation, and after leaving spiritual incarnation it experiences an extended time of assimilation of the spiritual fruits of the earth life just past.

No Ego ever comes to birth without the assistance of innumerable celestial Beings whose ministrations to the human race form a romance of incomparable splendor. St. Paul, observing their many and varied activities in the service of man, declared that we are ever encompassed about with clouds of invisible witnesses. Something of an outline of the work of those luminous Ones will be attempted in the following pages of this book.

## Chapter I

# T H E   A R C H E T Y P E

*or The Heavenly Pattern  
of The Human Body*

### THE FORMULA OF CREATION

*It was therefore necessary that the patterns of things  
in the heavens should be purified . . .* —Hebrews 9:23

The universal formula of creation is stated by St. John in the opening verses of his Gospel: "In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God . . ." The Word is formulated of the four alchemical principles of Fire, Earth, Air, and Water; or, in the words of Enoch: "And I gave him a name (ADAM) from the four substances: the East, the West, the North, and the South."

These four streams of force represent the ultimate polarity—Fire and Air being positive or masculine; Earth and Water being negative or feminine. Such are the potencies concentrated in each minute cell in which life has its beginning. Each cell is formed of the masculine principle of life coalesced with the feminine principle of form. The two powers are represented by the longitudinal and horizontal lines that bisect and divide the cell, impressing upon it the signature of the cross which is the signature of the Earth as well as of the human life evolving upon it.

The nucleus of each cell is visible as a spark of light blazing like a miniature star. This is the precipitation of the essence of life, the heart of the Word which may be translated as Love; for the Word, or Cosmic Christ Principle, and Love are interchangeable terms. "And the Word was made flesh and dwelt among us." (John 1:14). Hence we may comprehend something of the truly divine origin of the fleshly tabernacle. It is not the part of wisdom to

deny or abuse the body; true wisdom reveres, transforms, and glorifies it.

From the beginning of creation, the human family has been enfolded by the archetypal forces of the stars, personified in Revelation as the Seven Spirits before the Throne and the celestial hosts. Before there were any visible bodies in the heavens, these Spirits and angelic hosts sang before God's Throne, even as the human Ego pre-exists in the heavens before incarnation in a physical body.

LOG The Spirit of Saturn (kabbalistically the Archangel Cassiel) gave the initial impulse of the Word in the First Day of Creation. Saturn is the architect of the solar system, and his signature is found in the bony structure of the human body, symbol of all that is most firm and most enduring. The Spirit of the Sun (the Archangel Michael, the Christ's representative in the war of light against darkness) is the personified Word, life's all-victorious radiance of the Second Creative Day. The Spirit of the Moon (the Archangel Gabriel) on the Third Day set his seal upon the archetypal patterns of etheric forces which are the matrix of all incarnational cycles. Mars (the Archangel Samael) on the Fourth Day impregnated the human soul with his own dynamic rhythms so that it might desire the change without which progress is impossible. In the Fifth Day, the Spirit of Mercury (the Archangel Raphael) impregnated the mortal intelligence with the capacity of reason so that it might become attuned to spiritual verities. In the Sixth Day, Jupiter will confer the gift of creative imagination and Venus will refine and transmute the soul-essences into usable power; their Archangels are Zachariel and Anael, respectively. The Seventh Day is the culmination of all the six foregoing labors, bringing to its close our great cycle of evolution, when the heavens shall be "rolled together as a scroll."

These Seven Great Days are reflected on a smaller scale in the various subcycles of evolution on the Earth. Three are already past, namely, the Saturn Period cor-

relating to the Polarian Epoch, the Sun Period to the Hyperborean, and the Moon Period to the Lemurian; and a similar recapitulation of past epochs occurs within the cycle of each of the great races.

In the Polarian Epoch the Earth was still a part of the solar nebula. At the close of the Hyperborean Epoch the Earth was expelled from the Sun, and in the beginning of the Lemurian Epoch the Moon was expelled from the Earth.

In the Polarian Epoch, æons previous to the Earth's separation from the Sun and its projection into space, the life wave which is our present Earth humanity had already evolved a kind of body; not densely physical, it is true, but gaseous and amorphous, with a feeler-like organ protruding from the top of that portion of the form which later developed into the head. After the body had evolved to something like its present human form, the protruding organ withdrew into the head and gradually became the pineal gland. This first "man" was the result of work performed under the supervision of the Hierarchies of Aries, Taurus, and Gemini. The human Spirit was not able to do its work alone and the supervision of the angelic hosts was really an internal guidance, the evolving life being controlled and directed from *within*, as it then had no free will of its own. The forces of Aries injected the spark of life into the archetypal form produced by Taurus, and the dual-force of Gemini set its androgyne impress upon the vivified archetype in a way which later resulted in the appearance of lungs. The forces of Leo then gave the fiery impulse which fashions the heart.

The Second Day, or Hyperborean Epoch, came under the hierarchial supervision of Cancer and Virgo. The archetypal pattern now began to assume a more definite form, and was luminous with an inner shining. The embryonic alimentary canal and glandular system were added, while the lungs became centers of radiant light. It was in this Second or Sun Day that the Archangelic Christ

dedicated Himself to the service of the Earth. (It is of interest to note that Christianity sets aside the Sun Day each week for dedication to the Christ.) The heart in this far-off time became the Christ center in man's body under Leo, the sign of the Archangelic Messenger, the Christ Spirit.

The archetypal pattern of this Second Day still retained the androgyne impress when, at its close, the Earth became detached from the Sun.

The work of the Moon Day or Lemurian Epoch came largely under the interior guidance of the Hierarchies of Gemini and Libra. Then, for the first time, the human figure assumed its present outlines. The cerebro-spinal nervous system and the voluntary muscles were then developed. (The sympathetic nervous system had been originated earlier in the Moon Period.) Under the lunar influences the hard, bony skeleton replaced the soft cartilaginous structure of earlier times. The lung-centers became gill-like in structure, as they adapted themselves from the fiery fog of Lemuria to the water-laden atmosphere which was to characterize Atlantis. This adaptation occupied the millions of years intervening between the late Lemurian Epoch and the early Atlantean Epoch. It was at the beginning of the Lemurian Epoch that the Moon was detached from the Earth, a change which brought about a corresponding archetypal adaptation; the archetype no longer bore an androgyne impress, but expressed one sex only. The separation of the sexes therefore appears in evolution on this Day. This is biblically the period of Adam and Eve, man and woman.

The Fourth or Mars Day was largely under the dominance of Scorpio and Sagittarius and *began* sometime in the Lemurian Epoch when the Lords of Mind gave the germ of mind—its rudimentary principle—to the *vanguard* of humanity in whom a division of the desire body had become possible. These pioneers felt impulses and emotions which rose out of their animal nature, yet they

vaguely perceived the existence of abstract moral and imaginative qualities. Their embryonic mind was linked with higher desires of which they now became conscious, and Schools of Initiation were organized in order that their progress might be accelerated by careful training, and thus provide teachers and guardians for their less evolved brothers. In the Atlantean Epoch mind was given to the *masses* of mankind. Thus the work of Third Day *pioneers* became the work of the *masses* in the Fourth Day.

Not until the Fifth or Mercury Day do we have a civilization on the Earth such as is familiar to us today. The forming of the archetypal patterns has gradually come more and more into man's own hands, giving him greater power over life and death. As humanity progresses, a minimum of the work is done by the Hierarchies working through and with him. The Lords of Mercury and Mars are most active at this juncture, their planetary forces ruling the hemispheres of the brain: Mercury the right, Mars the left.

The archetypal pattern of our present Fifth Day is under the control of the human Ego. The principal work of this day is the unfoldment of the Ego and the specialization of its creative powers in the forebrain, correlative to the consciously-worked separation of the etheric from the physical body. This includes also an awakening of the ductless glands. This separation, which is now brought about only by rigorous effort, will be incorporated in the archetypes of the Sixth Creative Day, and will then be the normal heritage of every human being.

The influence of Mars working through the brain and voluntary nervous system is responsible for the harvest of sin and bloodshed which humanity reaps today. This must continue until such time as man is ready to yield allegiance to Mercury instead of Mars; when reason, not blind force, shall rule.

The Sixth Creative Day will be primarily guided by Jupiter and Venus. The archetype of this Day will again

radiate the luminosity of the Second or Sun Day. The body-pattern, however, will not be a shapeless object, but will be beautiful and symmetrical, so sensitized that it cannot assimilate flesh or even plant foods but will be sustained entirely upon the most ethereal substances. Man will learn once more to derive his sustenance directly from the sunshine and air without intermediaries of any kind, as in the Hyperborean Epoch. The larynx will then be the power organ of the body whereby spiritual generation through the spoken word will make man truly a god, able to create living beings at his own will.

The spiritualized centers within the head, the pineal and pituitary glands, will radiate the transmuted life essence. The heart will be in the center of the body sending forth a continuous aura of divine protection. The pneumogastric nerve which connects the brain and heart will be a thread of spiritual life-force, the symbol of immortality. The principal organs of the body will assume a flower shape, luminous and beautiful, functioning perfectly to the harmonious rhythms of the spiritualized vital body.

This new and perfected body will possess a dual spinal cord through which the forces of the Sun and Moon will flow to produce once more the spiritual equilibrium symbolized by the Philosopher's Stone. St. Paul had studied this sublime picture in the archetypal world when he wrote, "Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the (new) day." (Thessalonians 5:5). It is to this glorified people the Christ will return that they may abide with Him always.

In the Seventh Creative Day God rests! The Word, having perfected all creative and evolutionary development as included in the Earth's archetypal plan, is withdrawn again into the universal heart of God (all good). Its archetypal pattern, fashioned according to the highest emanations of the zodiacal Hierarchies, bears again the androgyne impress: "Made in the image and likeness of God."

## ENVIRONMENTAL ARCHETYPE

The archetypal region is located in the realms of mental substance. The picture patterns of all that an Ego has been and has attained during past incarnational cycles is vividly outlined in mind-stuff. Therefore it is by use of the power inherent in this same mind substance that an individual can gradually alter both his personal and environmental archetypes. Hence the mind is the true occult or inner path of purification and perfection, and is for this reason the most important of all the vehicles of spirit. "Be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind," is an admonition of profound esoteric significance.

As the forces of the mighty celestial Hierarchies produce continuous changes in the archetypal patterns of the evolving human body, so the archetypal body of the planet Earth is gradually undergoing transformation. A portion of the lessons learned by the disembodied Spirit in the interim between death and birth is concerned with this work.

In that interim, as in earth lives, one may perform his mission conscientiously or evade responsibilities. However the work is done, compensating lines of force extend into the next earth life and each Ego receives its just deserts. One who is born into a beautiful environment, or who is the recipient of Earth's bounty, is receiving the reward of work well done during the heaven-world interval. A barren and desolate environment, or repeated disappointments relative to the outpouring of nature's products, is but the accurate toll of justice for duties evaded or ill-performed in that inter-world period.

"Whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap," applies to all planes of life and being.

The archetype is a vibratory mold composed of mental substance. It is activated by the Ego and the strength imparted to it determines the length of the incarnation to follow. When that imparted force is spent, the life of its



externalized physical form ceases. The sand in the hour-glass has run out.

The archetype may be compared to a hollow mold. Into that mold there is drawn the atoms of which the dense body is composed. The quality and potency of these atoms are determined by the seed atom of the physical body which carries over from one life to another.

In the case of a suicide whose term of life did not terminate in accordance with that of the archetype, the latter continues to vibrate until such time arrives as death would naturally have occurred. During that interim the Ego experiences a painful condition that has been compared to toothache. The archetype is "aching" for the substance which should rightly fill it, but which it cannot again appropriate. Some recollection of the suffering that ensues becomes the deterrent in a succeeding life to a repetition of committing such a wrong against the law of life.

When through concentration a contact is established with the archetype of any form, its inmost secrets become accessible. The archetype reveals its very nature; it veritably speaks to the qualified investigator. Its life's story is revealed through sound and light. It is grasped in its totality, past, present, and future being rolled up into a momentary revelation, since consciousness in the mental world, wherein the archetype exists, transcends this three dimensional world of time and space.

#### WORLD ARCHETYPES

Every nation has its own archetype. This heavenly pattern is fashioned of both the highest ideals and the weaknesses of the nation. It is through the archetype which overshadows a land that the Race Spirit operates in an endeavor to eliminate weakness and to bring the ideal into objective manifestation.

Jerusalem and the Holy Land is an illuminating example of the above statement. Located in the ethers above the physical city in the hills of Judea is the heavenly

Jerusalem. This was common knowledge among the early Christians, many of whom possessed the extended sight necessary to verify it for themselves. St. Peter refers in his Epistle to this "upper Jerusalem."

On Sunday, the Sun's Day, it was customary for the various groups of esoteric Christians who were following Our Lord's Way to assemble together and lift themselves in consciousness into ecstatic contemplation of this Holy City. From this practice arose the admonition current among them:

*So part we sadly in this troublous world,  
To meet with joy in sweet Jerusalem.*

St. John in his Revelation details much of the glorious vision of the heavenly Jerusalem which it was granted to the worthy to behold. (His divine Revelation was received on the Sun's Day.) He describes his vision as follows: "And I, John, saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband."

The heavenly archetype includes, therefore, not alone all the minute details of the Earth's geographical structure, but also its flora and fauna, in addition to the human archetypes. *Man's archetype is a direct reflection of his state of consciousness (evolution) at any point of time.* Likewise, each organ of the physical body is an objectification of its etheric counterpart, and the etheric pattern in its turn a replica of the mental-realm archetype. Powerful inner spiritual forces produced the perfect physical body of the Grecian Golden Age, an era when many illumined Egos walked and communed consciously with the gods. The famed sculptors of that time possessed the ability to investigate and study these heavenly images at first hand, and to reproduce their perfect symmetrical proportions. The modern world has never ceased to marvel over the perfection with which the Greek sculptors portrayed the human body. The secret of their unparalleled sculptural

art lay not in an anatomical knowledge, for that did not excel if indeed it equaled that of our own day, but was to be found in their ability to observe the perfect body-image as it exists in the archetypal world.

The forces used by an Ego in fashioning the archetype for another earthly embodiment are both harmonious and destructive in nature according to the fruitage of experience in past incarnations. Weakened and malformed organs are the result of inharmonious vibrations in the archetype, and are shown in squares and oppositions in the star map of the incoming Ego. The constructive or upbuilding forces which go into the fashioning of healthy organs are reflected as benefic aspects.

All objective forms possess an inner life-essence wherein lies hidden the source of their existence. These are created, as we have seen, by the angelic hosts, or celestial Hierarchies as we have designated them. In the case of the human archetypal patterns, the Ego that is preparing for birth assists in the work.

One of the most gifted of our modern poets, Angela Morgan, might well have been describing man's archetypal pattern when she penned these lines:

*If man would wear his heavenly birth  
More grandly than the birth that seems,  
Bodies would mirror God's design  
Mortal no longer, but divine.  
Go look within some shining pool—  
Behold the being God hath made,  
Of which the flesh is but the tool;  
Witness the shape His hand portrayed.*

#### THE ARCHETYPE OF THE FIFTH ROOT RACE

A study of the archetypal loom will reveal the significance of the Fourth Commandment given by Moses: "Honor thy father and thy mother, that thy days may be

long upon the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee.”

The terms “father” and “mother” refer also to the constructive and formative principles in Nature. When one learns to attune his life harmoniously to this dual creative force, he is necessarily in harmony with his fellow man, and all his acts are motivated by love and truth, the highest dictates of spirit.

Moses, the great seer, relates his experience in spiritual consciousness when he was shown “the pattern in the Mount.” He there saw the Tabernacle with its Holy of Holies, in its deeper significance referring to the glorified or spiritualized body of man himself, which man must learn to build and inhabit in the New Age. Moses repeatedly declares: “I was faithful in all things to the pattern shown me in the Mount.” The archetypal pattern which he saw during his forty days’ vigil was that of the new Fifth Root Race, the Aryan, which was then in process of formation under the supervision of the four great Hierarchies called the Lords of Destiny, namely: Taurus, Scorpio, Leo, and Aquarius.

Because of his experience on the Mount, Moses became a lawgiver in a much more profound sense than is generally understood by orthodox religionists. He not only met Jehovah, the Angelic Minister of all race religions, face to face, and received commands regarding the welfare of his people, but he also observed the working of the great Hierarchies. He beheld them weaving the cosmic pattern typified by the Tabernacle in the Wilderness, which sets forth symbolically the method and the direction of spiritual growth for the entire Fifth Root Race. This great privilege Moses earned by his intrinsic worthiness. He possessed a lofty spirituality, a devout humility, a forgetfulness of self, and a readiness to sacrifice himself for the benefit of others. According to infallible occult law, one who is worthy may for a time observe the processes being worked out on the inner planes by the Exalted Ones long before they manifest outwardly, and

later he may assist them in their work. Moses incorporated in the Book of Exodus something of the glories revealed to his contemplation during his mystic forty days and forty nights on the Mount.

The form and building of the Ark of the Covenant, its furnishings, the materials and colors employed in each device, contain much esoteric significance which has been interpreted in our volume on *The Hexateuch*.

Like Egypt's great Master, Hermes Trismegistus, Moses thus verified the occult truth that "Things which are above are as things which are below."

Another famed biblical character who adds his testimony relative to the existence of the heavenly patterns is the prophet-seer Ezekiel, who says in his mystical forty-third chapter:

*Afterward he brought me to the gate, even the gate that looketh toward the east. And behold, the glory of the God of Israel came from the way of the east; and his voice was like a noise of many waters; and the earth shined with his glory . . . So the spirit took me up, and brought me into the inner court; and behold, the glory of the Lord filled the house. And I heard him speaking unto me out of the house; and the man stood by me.*

The vision vouchsafed Ezekiel shows a further development of the celestial plan of man's progression. The cosmic skeins are woven in the closest relationship to human needs. It is the unwinding of this scroll which man in his blindness has considered the immutable Laws of Fate. Were he not so spiritually blind he would know that the Lords of Destiny give only the broad outline; man himself is free to fill in the details.

*This is the law of the house; upon the top of the mountain the whole limit thereof round about shall be most holy. Behold, this is the law of the house.*

As we have seen, every geographical feature of the earth has its heavenly counterpart. The conditions of the New Age, the type of its people and the manner of their life are "reflected in the sky," and the seer beholds their descent in purity and beauty, "like a bride adorned."

#### THE INTERVAL BETWEEN DEATH AND REBIRTH

When the human Spirit is released from the bondage of flesh by the processes of death, the first task in which it is engaged is that of clearing the causation generated during the earth life just terminated. This work usually occupies a length of time approximately one-third that of the Earth span. This is the purgatorial region of which the Church teaches.

After the process of purgation has been completed, the Ego is free to ascend into higher realms, there to partake of heavenly bliss and to learn how further to attune itself with the planetary forces. The time spent in these celestial realms depends upon the Ego's advancement. There are two different classes of Egos which come to rebirth quickly: the very material, who have a minimum of spiritual consciousness and therefore return to Earth as speedily as possible, and the very spiritual, who voluntarily sacrifice the bliss of heaven in order to return to Earth on some special mission of mercy and love. It also happens, but only exceptionally, that in order to have the needed environment for its best progress, an Ego is brought to Earth sooner than its "pattern" would ordinarily indicate; and also, on the contrary, an Ego sometimes is retained in the heaven world for a longer period of time, for the same reason. Such Egos are seldom happy in their earthly environment; but their experiences are none the less the most valuable for them at that stage of their development, despite their feeling from birth that the "time is out of joint."

Exactly in the same way that the liberated Spirit during the hours of sleep studies its own body processes,

the better to exert control over them and so be able to live a fuller and more useful life during the day, so also the Spirit after death learns to cooperate with cosmic creative forces, that is, the angelic Hierarchies, in order to build a better body and environment for its next Earth incarnation.

It is the soul evolution of each Ego which determines its particular place in the Cosmic Plan and this in turn determines the kind of instruction it receives from its angelic teachers in heaven. One who has built an inferior mental structure while on Earth cannot transcend this limitation merely by reason of dying. However, the Ego is not at the mercy of its mortal intellect. It is the Ego which creates the intellect, and neither intelligence nor intellectual capacity is a fixed quality, but can change for better or worse during the course of a single lifetime. If it were not so evolution would be impossible. Nor is the process of evolution stopped at death. The Ego goes on from the point at which it stood at death. Everything must be *worked through* in heaven and Purgatory, as well as here on Earth, and no one can receive more than he has earned on any plane of manifestation.

In the interval between death and birth the Ego learns under the Saturn Ray how to think abstractly and how to conserve and project mental force. The Mars Ray teaches the dynamic qualities of mind and the constructive use of the power of desire. That this knowledge when brought down to Earth is so often used negatively is due to the personality having clouded the pure understanding of spirit gained in its heavenly home; but all this can be truly *re-collected* through meditation.

Under the Mercury Ray, man learns the use of the factual or concrete mind, and the modes of logic. Hermes Psychopompos was the Guide of Souls, with Hermes in the role of conductor of the souls through the Underworld. This is a most significant point in Grecian esotericism, and reminds us of the occult maxim that logic, or reason,

is the best guide on all planes of being. The neophyte will do well to cultivate the rational faculty and never allow logic to be unseated by psychic phenomena of an exciting nature. It is our Elder Brothers from Mercury (typified in Hermes, or the Archangel Raphael) who teach the receptive Ego the proper use of mental concentration and picturization, and how to create, retain, or project mental images for purposes of demonstration in the earthly environment. Through the Venus Ray, the Lords from Venus (human like ourselves, as also are the Lords from Mercury) teach the Ego how to garner the soul-essences of life and assimilate them, so that the egoic Glory manifests an added luminosity. The Archangel of Venus, known as Anael, corresponds to Eros, the god of love in Grecian mythology. Eros was represented as a beautiful young man who, as Cupid, personifies the Divine Child or Love principle to be awakened within all mankind.

To all that the Ego has garnered of spiritual wisdom and experience, the archanglic Sun Force adds its own universal Power, and this becomes the Ego's central source of inspiration. The Jupiter Ray bears the impress of the spiritual forces to be released during coming ages. Only a portion of its power is now active. Uranus and Neptune work only with those advanced Initiate-egos who have passed through the portals of Initiation.

Every occultist or metaphysician knows that it is difficult to translate the happenings of spiritual realms into the language of the physical world. We may, however, give some small indication of those realms by saying that if it were possible for normal human sense to cognize them they would appear somewhat like vast layers of light vibrating at varying degrees of density. Within these immense strata of pulsating light-essence, the Spirits inhabiting them have the appearance of radiant scintillant sparks raying out the various colors of the spectrum. Every Ego, and every Angel, always carries the color of its individual Spirit Ray. In the highest and most atten-



uated realms, the color and musical note are simultaneously discernible.

The work of the Ego preparing for incarnation in these realms is purely mental. It works in mind-*substance*, which is far more solid and real than the dense matter familiar to our present poorly organized senses in the body. The mind-substance, by the use of the twin spirit powers of Will and Imagination, is organized along lines of force which make a definite pattern, according to the state of life and being of the Ego which does the work. The higher the realm, the clearer and more powerful are the lines of force, for their potency increases with their ethereality. These lines of force, which at lower levels are seen as magnetic rain or streams of magnetism, also bear the colors which correspond to their inherent quality. Altruistic impulses reveal beautiful tones of blue and gold. Personal motives without thought of others impregnate the forces with darker hues and the lines are uneven, which results in the distortion of the archetypal image.

Projected into the Desire World these currents indicate the anger and passion sent out by man upon the Earth. These forces are particularly heavy, and strongly impel the Egos which become caught in their currents. The Desire World is a network of such rays. They form, as it were, patterns of force, and each one of the various Mystery Schools has its own representative pattern. So also do the Black Brotherhoods. It is these lines of force in the Desire World which enable those knowing how to use them to vampirize other Egos, stealing from them their life-essence and destroying their health, or even causing their death as in the tales of witchcraft and sorcery which have come down from ancient times.

Again the lines appear etherically in the vital body, and finally in the dense body itself. On each plane the lines of force become denser and more slow-moving as they descend, hence, less potent for either good or ill.

Since the thought-forms of the mental realms control

our physical world, it is evident that the heaven world experience is not wholly dissimilar to our earth life. Purgatory and heaven show a similarity to the civilizations on earth. The heaven world of a Christian is not like the heaven of other faiths, nor are the conditions in the inner world the same now as they were in ancient times, yet the same kind of work goes on at all times. Today, for example, the instructions being given in the heaven world deal largely with Universality, Oneness, Fellowship, and Brotherhood in preparation for the New World Order belonging to the coming Aquarian Age. These precepts would have been useless if given to the masses a century ago. The more advanced Egos are already receiving instructions on forces which will prolong both youth and life. These will not, however, be known to the masses before the latter half of the Aquarian Age.

In the World of Thought, the music of the spheres is a universally experienced fact of nature, All form is the product of sound, and *the lines of force we have spoken of are in fact musical vibration and audible to the spiritual ear*. When the Ego becomes sufficiently infused with the desire for rebirth, the rhythm of the music in which it lives, moves, and has its being changes, and it is enwrapped in harmonic measures which bear it downward toward the Earth plane. *Downward* is a relative term and means esoterically to draw toward ever denser matter.

The song of the zodiacal Hierarchies wafts the incoming Ego on wings of melody toward the new environment which eventually will mean birth into a physical body, and we have shown in preceding paragraphs, the Ego has itself helped prepare that environment according to the soul powers it developed in former earth lines.

Illumined Egos upon returning into earth life bring with them the memory of that exalted ceremonial which accompanies the preparation for human re-embodiment. Maeterlinck touches fancifully upon it in his mystic adventure play, "The Blue Bird."

This Ceremonial of Preparation is really the actual work of preparing the specific archetype of the body to be worn by the reincarnating Ego under the rhythmic emanations of the twelve zodiacal Hierarchies and their planetary agents. Although the principal work is done through and with the Hierarchy of Cancer, under Neptune the etheric archetype is formed and under the Moon is fashioned its physical duplicate. The archetype is infused with the life force of the Ego for whom it is built, and is attuned to the earth rhythms by the Hierarchy of Scorpio (the Lords of Form) and the Hierarchy of Sagittarius (the Lords of Mind).

The momentum of the celestial pattern is adapted to the intended life-span, although this span may be lengthened or shortened due to later events and circumstances connected with the Ego's earthly experience. As long as the archetype vibrates, life in the physical body will endure. It is the rhythmic music of the archetype which attracts and places the physical body atoms. The note of the archetype is given to it by the individual who is building it. It can be no higher or lower in pitch than the soul note of that Ego. If the Spirit has lost its clear spiritual vision through its encasement in the outer personality, the archetypal lines may become distorted and a misshapen physical body will be the result. Every act, thought, and feeling of the past has set its impress there for harmony or inharmony. It is these forces which are built into the Spirit's starry archetype (the horoscope) as benefic or malefic aspects.

It is only as one comes to these holy mysteries of the Ceremonial Preparation for Birth and realizes the vast unification of the powers of heaven and earth in connection therewith, that he fully appreciates the biblical statement that "man is fearfully and wonderfully made."

The forces of the feminine Cancer, together with her mystic ruler, the Moon, are active at the time of conception. Simultaneously, her opposite pole of Capicorn with

its Saturnian planetary force, is crystallizing into shape the coming physical body.

The Hierarchy of Libra with its Venusian Love Ray gives the pattern for the desire body, while its opposite pole Aries endows it with the powers of life and motion.

The Lords of Leo through the spiritual Sun set the impress of divinity upon the heart, and the opposite polarity of Aquarius and Uranus holds that divine pattern whereby the heart is to become the sacred body center—the Sacred Heart in very truth—or the transfigured body-temple of the future.

The dual mind-forces separated under Gemini become spiritualized and unified under the opposite pole of Sagittarius. The mental powers are stimulated by Virgo and Mercury and fostered spiritually by the opposite pole of Pisces and Jupiter, while the etheric pattern is held by Virgo and inspired with spiritual radiance of the Piscean influence of Neptune, co-ruler with Jupiter of the constellation Pisces.

Taurus, the Lord of Karmic reaping, impregnates man-in-the-making with the Venusian forces of love and harmony; the opposite pole of Scorpio with the martial forces of inharmony and disintegration. The physical body and the earth plane are the battleground of these two forces. The oftener man dies the better he lives. Each interval between death and birth on the inner plane places the human Spirit in closer attunement with its own inherent god-power, and makes possible its increasing manifestation. These celestial experiences also awaken within man the realization that birth and death are but incidents in the eternal progress of the immortal Spirit.

Eventually when the Spirit is sufficiently strong, Venus (harmony and love) will overcome Mars (sex and death) in the world and the words of St. Paul will be realized: "Death will be swallowed up in victory."

Truly, in the words of Paracelsus, "There is a star behind every process going on in man. All the forces of

heaven have their corresponding activity in the parts of the body that are expressive of their powers."

### THE ARCHETYPAL LIFE LINE

It is man's celestial pattern that determines the form and feature of his body in every particular—its height, color of eyes and hair, the temperament, and racial characteristics in general. In the invisible archetype lie the hidden causes of all that manifests in the visible form. The archetype bears the imprint of the most important events of the life to come: notably birth, marriage, death, or Initiation—if the Ego be so far advanced.

Every race and nation in and through which the Ego has functioned leaves its indelible imprint upon the Spirit, and the essence of these experiences are in turn impressed upon the archetypes of future bodies. These ethereal prototypes may be likened to mirrors in which every thought and emotion are pictured.

We are today what we made ourselves yesterday. If we do not like the results we can change them by altering the pattern after which we are fashioned and to which we are attuned. In other words, we can remake our lives. "Behold, I make all things new," said the Christ. This, too, is our own prerogative. More than that, it is the prerequisite for attaining citizenship in the New Age as Christed men and women.

We have said that the heart is the Sun of the body. As the life is renewed, spiritually important transformations take place in this organ. The archetype is more intimately associated with the heart than with any other part of the body, and consequently its animating impulses pass in and out of the body through this central contact. These life forces increase or decrease in accordance with man's mode of life, as evidenced in the story of "the good king Hezekiah" whose life was prolonged in order that he might complete a great work for his people. The dial upon which the hand was turned back as related in II

Chronicles, is but another description of the life processes of the archetype, which may be altered and the years of life extended, provided the Ego has occupied himself in so constructive a manner that he is prepared to render to a number of people some high and useful service.

The archetypal life line is not to be changed for personal benefit or to give additional opportunities to the individual Ego, but in order that he may use his acquired gifts in a larger mission for others. Note that it was a grave crisis in Israel requiring such wise leadership as Hezekiah could give that caused his life to be prolonged.

*The archetype is a thought-form, hence amenable to the power of thought.* This fact it is which gives to man the opportunity to make himself in the image and likeness of God, for man is truly "the little image of the great form." By careful, constructive thought, man may build for himself here and now a temple that will reflect at all times His holy Presence. "As a man thinketh in his heart, so is he." Jacob Boehme, the illumined mystic, writes concerning the invisible origin of the visible man:

"Out of the anguishing chamber of the body of the earth, out of the spirits of God are rising the stars which kindle the body of this world. Out of this body, the *fruit* or *seed* generateth itself which is Fire, Air, Water, and Earth.

"Man's house of flesh is also such a house as the dark deep of this world is (chaos), wherein the seven spirits of God generate themselves. The body taketh its food from the seed of the seven spirits of God in the body of the great deep which is Fire, Air, Water, and Earth.

"As in the deep of this world through the kindling (vibration) of the stars, a *seed* is generated out of the dark deep, so in like manner, in man's house of flesh there is generated a *seed* according to the eternal birthright of the seven or fountain spirits and in this seed there are three distinct things (will, wisdom, activity), according to the Trinity in the Deity."

## Chapter II

### *The Immaculate Conception*

*Our birth is but a sleep and a forgetting;  
The soul that rises with us, our life's star,  
Hath had elsewhere its setting,  
And cometh from afar.* —Wordsworth

*Imagination is the source of all magical action.*

*The imagination dwelling in the brain is the moon  
of the microcosm.* —Paracelsus

As a preparatory exercise in the study of this lesson, the student is recommended to meditate upon the Annunciation, Luke 1:26-38. It will do much to open his understanding to the spiritual significance of what follows.

The Immaculate Conception represents the highest achievement of womanhood. It signifies an attainment so wondrously mysterious and sacredly beautiful that mere words are inadequate to reveal its true meaning. We can know it fully only in the deep silence of the soul.

Mary, the mother of Jesus, symbolizes the Eternal Feminine, the love principle. Eve, the Universal Mother, in whom this principle fell, becomes Mary, the mother of the immaculately conceived, when this fallen love principle is uplifted and redeemed.

Mary was an earthly woman, but "Behold, I tell you a mystery." She had so purified her nature that the child she conceived, and to whom she gave birth, was of such purity and perfection that He qualified to become a vehicle for the Christos.

The life and works of Mary, Joseph, and Jesus are prophetic of the New Age, when every Ego shall be well-born, wooed in love by parents who are pure and chaste.

Only then will a race of new beings, united in fellowship and brotherly kindness, unfold wings of immortality and make manifest a world wherein will abide peace, joy, health, and plenty. It will truly show forth "Holiness unto the Lord."

### THE SIN AGAINST THE HOLY GHOST

In the first chapter of this book, *The Archetype*, we learned how it was built in the heaven world for a "dip into matter." The power used by the Ego in constructing the archetypal pattern is the dual creative force, often designated "archetypal forces" in occult terminology. The field of action of these archetypal forces is the highest plane of the mental world, the point where spirit is reflected into the worlds of form. The archetypal forces are, in turn, emanations from the Third Heaven, or World of Abstract Ideas, for in the germinal idea is the primary source of all phenomena.

Cosmically, the archetypal forces are the life essence poured out by that Great Being known as the Holy Ghost, Jehovah. The Angels are His messengers in this work. Western Wisdom teaches us that Jehovah's "world" is this same Third Heaven or "Chaos," from which all Creation came forth when spirit moved upon its "waters;" for these are the "waters" in which Life germinates, as Idea. They are the home world of human Spirits or Egos; but only the most advanced Egos remain there any length of time before descending to rebirth. For the great majority, this Heaven is virtually non-existent.

When an Ego begins its descent for rebirth, its first task is building the archetype in the Second Heaven, by means of the two archetypal forces. If the Ego has wasted its life substance in "riotous living" in previous incarnations, it must necessarily fashion the heavenly pattern for a new body from a minimum of creative force-substance (the two terms are almost interchangeable in spiritual



realms), and this will be reflected in a physical vehicle of impaired vitality. Thus, the Spirit learns through painful limitations the error of its previous indiscretions. This limitation lasts until the Ego has, by living in harmony with cosmic Law, again attracted a sufficiency of creative life essence to strengthen the lines of force that are rayed through the archetypal pattern, and so determine its strength and beauty.

The sin against the Holy Ghost is *unforgivable* in that it must be expiated through suffering until a sufficient supply of divine life essence has been accumulated to compensate for what was lost through wrongdoing. It is the *greatest of all sins* in that it is a desecration of the pure Christ force within man, the force which unites him with the spiritual universe, and without which all creation would be resolved once more into "Chaos and old night."

This great creative force is rayed out upon Earth by the Cherubim, Hierarchy of Cancer. By this means they awaken in man his own cosmic or universal life spirit, the receptacle of his inner Christ essence (Leo). Cancer is therefore termed the "star of Mothers," for "deep within her mystic heart lies the well of life, fathomless as the ocean of eternity, nurturing in the sheltered depths of its sacred waters the seeds of all forms that from the dawn to the twilight of a cosmic day move over the earth in a rhythmic succession."

When man was guided by the stellar Hierarchies prior to the evolution of his own individual will, the union of man and woman took place in accordance with stellar harmony as a sacred ceremony, so pain and discord were unknown.

These truths were transferred for safe-keeping to Temples of Initiation for the guidance of the few as the masses stepped down into denser materiality and held the sacred secrets in ridicule and disbelief. That this remains the general attitude is to be seen in the heavy toll of pain, disease and death which is, and must inevitably be, the

accompaniment of childbirth so long as humanity forgets the divine Plan with its ministry of Angels.

### THE ORDER OF ESSENES

Among the cherished few Illumined Ones who retained these priceless truths were the Essenes, who lived in their own private communities in Egypt and the Holy Land. These high teachings were a part of their Temple work, and were brought into objective manifestation in their daily lives.

Conception is a threefold process involving body, mind, and Spirit. The processes of purification involve long periods of study and rigorous training. Today there are many advanced Egos awaiting the opportunity of re-birth through pure and chaste parents that they may further this knowledge among men and so bring in the New Age.

In order that a high Initiate may come to earth and inhabit a physical vehicle sufficiently sensitized to be of use to him, it is necessary to begin preparation with the grandparents. Such were chosen for the Holy Birth. The parents of the Blessed Mary were high Initiates of the Essenian Order, Joachim and Anna by name. Their lives were pure and chaste, devoted to the service of the Essenian Order.

Mary the Virgin was thus conceived and born through an Immaculate Conception, in full and conscious cooperation with the angelic ministry. She was dedicated to service of the Temple in Jerusalem at the age of three, and was reared in its holy environs. From birth her most intimate counsellors and companions were not human beings, but Angels.

Her love dream and mating with another Initiate of highest rank in the Essenian Order is a story of incomparable beauty. An early Greek hymn speaks of Joseph as more than a saint, "for only such could espouse Mary who was privileged beyond an Archangel's dream." St.

Ambrose writes, "They were one in mind, heart and spirit, for Joseph had also taken the vow of perpetual virginity. Her holy Virgin heart could only mate with a holy Virgin heart." He states further that Joseph left Mary not because of her unworthiness (as intimated by critics of the Christian legend), but because he felt unworthy to remain in her presence.

#### MARY THE VIRGIN IMMACULATELY CONCEIVED

As the High Priest Joachim and his Initiate wife Anna watched in adoration the angelic hosts attending upon the birth of their holy child, they saw vast emanations of light pour from wing-shaped auras, and listened to the triumphant chorusing as Angels sang of the new era that was dawning with the birth of Mary: "The Angels in Heaven and Earth salute thee for the new life which thou bringeth to Earth."

The angelic songs referred not only to her Divine Son, but also to the archetype of the Immaculate Conception which the blessed Madonna was to inaugurate for the eventual redemption of the entire human race.

An incoming Ego often effects great changes in the life of its prospective mother. This strange influence was notable in the life of the Initiate mother of the Holy Mary. When she entered a sick room the suffering forgot their ills and were healed. If dissension occurred among neighbors, her very presence seemed to inspire peace, and enemies soon became friends.

The harvests of Joachim and Anna, so pathetically sparse till this momentous time, now filled their bins to overflowing. Peace, harmony, plenty, and happiness were heralds of the coming to Earth of the blessed child whom her mother named Mary, which, in Hebrew, means a *god-bearer*.

When Anna first beheld the beautiful babe she declared, "She shall be blessed above all others for she shall

open the doors of the East that the Desired of all Nations shall appear.”

After puberty every human being, during the monthly moon cycle of twenty-eight days, develops within himself a sacred seed formed of divine creative brain substance. This work is completed each month as the Moon enters the sign that the Sun occupied at the person’s birth.

The Essenes were divided into two groups, the Householders and the Temple Initiates. The former married and set up homes in the outer world, where they made practical demonstration of the holy Temple teachings by preparing themselves for immaculate parenthood and thus attracting advanced Egos from the heaven worlds to further the work of the Essenian Order.

Temple Initiates who had taken the vow of perpetual virginity remained within Temple precincts to carry on higher initiatory work. These Temple workers were taught how to lift their seed to the head and thus illumine its spiritual organs, the pituitary and pineal glands, and make their powers available for various forms of mental and spiritual creative activities.

#### PREPARATION FOR HUMAN EMBODIMENT

Each Spirit prepared for birth by hosts of Angels, comes to Earth radiant and fragrant with the love and blessing of the holy Mother Mary and her special band of ministrants.

The masculine, or will, force crystallizes in the embryo primarily in the spinal cord and brain cells. The feminine, or image-making, force centers in the heart. All the organs of the foetus are formed by the intermingling of these masculine and feminine powers. The principal organs and systems of the body are twofold. This is true of the brain, the creative organs, the heart, lungs, liver, and kidneys, the glandular system, and the two nervous systems.

When equilibrium is achieved between these two forces the body is transformed into the glorious vehicle of the Initiate, that body which passes unharmed through fire, air, water, and earth, and is described by the Initiate Paul as the "body celestial."

Prenatal education of a child is the most important phase of education; and it is also the most neglected and misunderstood. If the incoming Ego is unwanted and unwelcome, its physical body is built under great difficulties. If the child is not wanted by the father only, the brain consciousness is apt to be slowed below normal and mental perception retarded. If the mother resents the child's coming there is liability to a weakened heart and uncertain or imperfect heart functioning.

Intricate and complicated are the skeins of human causation which entangle life with life; long and bitter will be the years and lives occupied in their unravelling!

The Holy Mary remains close to the earth sphere and works with man in an endeavor to mitigate to some degree the far-reaching results of his ignorance and sin. In the words of an unidentified writer: "A string of pearls is not grown in a month, neither is the beauty of a single pearl formed in a day. Man's experiences, strivings, sorrows, joys, failings, and attainments, through many days of life, ever add lustre and expansion to his innermost being. Only when he has become a Pearl of Great Price and of surpassing loveliness has he earned the right to adorn the Brow of the Holy Mother."

#### THE PROSPECTIVE MOTHER AND THE IMPORTANCE OF PRENATAL WORK

Angels always surround an expectant mother. She is truly set apart, and receives the blessings of many. It is vitally essential that her surroundings be of peace, harmony and if possible beauty. Every prospective mother can increase her service to the incoming Ego by having

at least one picture that expresses a high idealism whereon to meditate daily, thus keeping her mind attuned to noble and beautiful thoughts. In this way she follows Mary into the hill country of consciousness, and there assists in fashioning a physical vestment suitable to the requirements of an advanced soul, one old in experience, good and wise in attainment.

With the help of his mother, Jesus made of his body a pure, holy and beautiful sanctuary for the indwelling Christ Spirit. He demonstrated for humanity the high degree of perfection to which a physical body may be raised, and provided mankind with the supreme pattern upon which to mold a new and perfect race. This Christ pattern remains in the Hall of Archetypes as an aid to all human Egos in body building. Gazing upon it, they know passion generates bodies that decay while love builds for eternity. The one erects a house upon the sands of time, against which the winds and floods of the emotional life will eventually prevail; the other builds upon the rock of Spirit where such storms have no power.

*Virginit*y is a state of consciousness, capable of attainment by anyone willing to work for its priceless possession. It is possible, through complete dedication to the mission of parenthood, to attract an Ego from the heaven worlds without awakening the fires of passion; and to bear it beneath a heart knowing only pure and sexless love. In the words of a medieval poet:

*As the sunbeam through the glass  
Passeth, but not staineth,  
So the Virgin as she was  
Virgin still remaineth.*

This was the attainment of the Holy Mary, and was the reason for the salutation of the angelic messenger Gabriel: "Hail, thou that art highly favored, the Lord is with thee."

There are many Christian idealists who long to follow in the footsteps of the immaculate Mary and Joseph, but because they are not virgins feel that it is useless even to try. But virginity begins with the mind and is essentially a condition of the soul. When that is achieved, as it had been in the case of Joseph and Mary, the physical act of bringing forth a child in no way violates that virginity.

Woman is the chief exponent and expression of the feminine or Word principle of God in its physical manifestation. This is the imagination, the image-building faculty of spirit. Because this faculty is particularly active in woman, her responsibility as a mother is very great, especially during the prenatal periods of her offspring.

Discussing this image building power of woman, Paracelsus writes: "The imagination of a pregnant woman is so active, that in conceiving seed into her body, she can transmute the foetus in different ways, since her interior stars are so strongly directed to the foetus that they produce impressions and influences. Wherefore, an infant in the mother's womb is, during its formation, as much in the hands and under the will of the mother as clay in the hands of the potter, who from it makes whatever pleases him.

*Leena.* "Any strong desire, appetite, or inclination can be impressed upon the foetus. It is also possible for such a woman by persistently thinking upon a wise and great man such as Plato or Aristotle, a great musician like Hoffhammer, a painter like Durer, so to work upon the plastic tendencies of her offspring that it will exhibit similar qualities. *But there must be also something in the mother which shall correspond to the special talents which she has imagined.* Imagination can also distort and deform the foetus and in this manner many wonders are produced where there are no physical peculiarities in the parents."

Cornelius Agrippa states in his *Occult Philosophy* that "many monstrous generations proceed from the monstrous imagination of a woman with child." He gives an

instance of a woman who was rough and hairy all over her body, like a wild beast, as a consequence of a kind of religious horror felt by her mother upon seeing and contemplating a picture of the hairy John the Baptist which hung in the room she occupied during the period of pregnancy for this daughter.

The importance of a peaceful environment and particularly sensitive condition for the incoming parents, cannot be too strongly emphasized. Formation of the organs of a foetus always marks a particularly sensitive condition for the incoming Spirit; it is a time when any unfavorable condition in the environment of the mother reacts most harmfully, often causing a retardation in the development of an organ which, in turn, causes a deformity. Parents may thus ignorantly create a heavy indebtedness to their unborn children, such as may require more than one earth life for liquidation. Conception is a sacred and holy adventure of spirit. When rightly realized as such, it will never be undertaken lightly or without a sense of appropriate responsibility.

#### HOW PAST KARMA AFFECTS THE INCOMING EGO

Celestial Beings assist an Ego in its preparation for an earthly pilgrimage. The Lords of Destiny, under whose direction the Law of Consequence is administered, impress upon the seed atom of its vital or etheric body the basic pattern of the earth life to come. This pattern is determined by the Ego's own past. We reap as we sow. At this stage this reaping finds expression in the seed atom of the etheric body; later it manifests in the etheric body grown from that seed; and still later, in the body which is the physical counterpart of the more tenuous etheric body, in the likeness of which it is formed. The effects of past lives also extend to circumstances and conditions. A clairvoyant can observe the full picture of a man in the seed atom of his vital body.

At the time of conception the matrix of the vital



body, fashioned by the Angels from material attracted by the Ego's vital body seed atom, is placed within the body of the mother; the seed atom of the dense body, procured in the same manner, is placed in the spermatozoa in the father's semen. We have here the reason for the vital body being positive in woman and negative in man, whereas the physical body is positive in man and negative in woman.

Paracelsus avers that "man, although born of woman, is never derived from woman, but always from man." In this statement he is referring to man's physical or dense body. The vital body or life force is the gift of the mother. The secret of fruitful unions is the feminine gift of the matrix of the vital body and the masculine gift of the seed atom of the dense body. In the blending of masculine and feminine forces, the fire and water principles, is to be found the secret of life.

Paracelsus also states that "semen is the essence of the human body, containing all the organs of the latter in ideal form. This semen is not the visible seminal fluid of man, but a semi-material principle contained in the sperma and for which the sperma serves as a vehicle. It is developed in the same way in which fire is produced from wood.

"Semen is composed of essences of the entire body, and if organs are missing or malformed, their especial essence is missing from the seminal extract." This is due to past causation, worked out true to law under the supervision of the Lords of Destiny.

Paracelsus also tells us that "imagination of the male produces semen; imagination of the mother exerts great constructive influence upon the development of the foetus, and upon this fact is based the similarity existing between parents and children." This also emphasizes the great importance of pure living and high and holy thinking on the part of the parents during the time an Ego is being prepared for a new Earth experience.

## HARMONY BETWEEN PARENTS THE PRIME ESSENTIAL

The first twenty-one days after conception are especially important. During this time the *desire* of the mother is focused upon the matrix continuously, and the Ego hovers near the mother, but it is not yet within its own growing form. There is a transmutation of colors in the seminal fluid at this time. The mother here may fashion as she will. Mary spent this period in communion with hosts of Angels.

At the expiration of the first twenty-one days, the Ego enters the body of the mother and its influence is added to that of the mother until the time of birth. The time of entrance is a crucial one for the Spirit; both the mother and child should have the benefit of the utmost peace and quiet. The day will come when this sacred time will be observed with all the solemnity now accorded the christening. Inharmony between parents at this time may produce serious consequences, sometimes even of a fatal nature. A large percentage of disease is caused by the misuse of the sacred life force, by feeding the body animal flesh, and by the use of false nerve stimulus of alcohol and nicotine. This mode of living is invariably accompanied by negative and destructive thinking. Science claims that many still births and abortions are caused by an excessive use of alcohol and nicotine. Such causation must be paid for in the agony of further tears and suffering.

The mass consciousness of man was not able to receive the lofty concept of the Immaculate Conception before the Christian Era. Few even now will accept it and live true to its high idealism. Upon those few will devolve the glorious privilege of ushering in the New Race—a race of advanced souls waiting to bring to man the demonstration of the powers of the Christos.

When prospective parents prepare themselves through prayer and holy aspiration without thought of self-gratification, the resulting Sacrament of Conception is immaculate. This was the high ideal shadowed forth by those

illustrious beings, Jesus, Mary, and Joseph, upon this weary, waiting world.

Madame Blavatsky says: "As the foetus develops from the fluid in the womb, so worlds germinate from universal ether in the womb of the universe. Also, these cosmic children are first nuclei, then ovules, gradually mature, become mothers and bring forth children of mineral, plant, animal, and man. Embryo in prenatal state, individual in family, family in state and state in mankind, earth in system, system in universe, universe in cosmos, and cosmos in Absolute—this is Evolution."

The creative energy of Spirit is bi-polar, or positive and negative, on all planes of manifestation. Metaphysically, we term this dual expression Will and Imagination; physically, the masculine and feminine poles of the creative (archetypal) force. In these operations and activities is to be found the spiritual origin of life's manifestations.

On any plane of being the work of the mother, the feminine or image-building principle, is that of moulding an archetype or pattern, minute in every detail, of the object to be created; this is the "pattern made in the heavens." It is fashioned of mind substance, and is not only formed but overshadowed and nourished into manifestation on the more material planes of being by the Divine Feminine.

The functions of the Will or masculine pole are vitalization, creation, activity. In body building this masculine aspect of Spirit pours into the etheric matrix the necessary quantity of physical atoms to give it form on the physical plane.

The human race is unisexual in its present stage of development. In the remote past the race was androgyne; it will be so again in the distant future. In all individuals the organs of the opposite sex are now present in germinal form. These facts bear witness to the universality of the law of polarity. It operates in every sphere of being from atom to God. The lower reflects the higher; as above, so below.

The sex of the body which an incoming Spirit is to inhabit is determined by guardian Angels long before the Ego comes into incarnation. This matter is determined in accordance with "ripe fate" to be liquidated in the coming life. When this choice is made the Spirit is above and beyond the limitation circumscribed by sex; it is in the pure light of spirit.

The descent of a Spirit is set to celestial music. From each plane it attracts a certain amount of material, of a low or high vibratory rate in strict accordance with its past causation. The substance of each and every plane possesses a certain polarity, positive or negative. If a feminine body is to be fashioned, the Ego draws negative atoms from the desire and physical planes and positive atoms from the etheric and mental. If a masculine body is to be built, negative atoms are attracted from the etheric and mental realms and positive atoms from the physical and desire worlds. A birth is thus foretold in the music of the spheres.

The divisions of sex are impermanent. "Every man is complete within himself and nothing is there lacking if he will but search the depths. Love is but the soul's desire for a portion of itself which it has lost and without which its joy is incomplete. That which we possess, yet are not conscious of, is lost, latent, present but unmanifest. The perfect being is fully self-conscious of all his parts and attributes, and perfection must be our end and aim. Know then that thou art in me and I in thee, and through you I become self-conscious of myself in thee. This is the Virgin Marriage, the only union known in heaven" (Esoteric Mysteries). "And the Spirit and the bride say 'Come . . . And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely'" (Rev. XXII:17).

The divine Mother Mary works eternally with the mothers of the world that their glorious heritage may be realized. The two Great Mothers of the zodiac, Cancer and Virgo, have placed upon her work and life their radiant

impress. Cancer, as the fructifying Mother, is represented by the Madonna and Child—the theme which has immortalized the world's master-artists. Virgo, the spirit of the Immaculate Conception, is typified by the Madonna enthroned and surrounded by multitudes of Angels singing gladsome hallelujahs for that high destiny which awaits the mothers of the world.

The story of the "fall" and redemption of the Divine Feminine (the imagination or image-building faculty of the soul) has been the theme of all mystic literature. This subject has also comprised the inner teachings of all Initiatory Schools. Hers are the secrets that Isis conceals beneath her veil of time. Until man approaches her altar with clean hands and pure heart this veil cannot be lifted so he can begin to comprehend and demonstrate its secret meanings.

In its true meaning the Holy Ghost has been but little understood by adherents of the Christian Church. It is the highest aspect of the third or Activity power of the Godhead. All evolving life is under its guidance. Its force is positive-negative, or will and image-building. Mary was overshadowed by the Holy Ghost for the reason that she, the supreme Initiate of all earthly women, had most nearly perfected within herself this image-building feminine faculty. Therefore she was able to aid a great Master Spirit in building the most perfect human body ever to manifest upon the earth plane.

The highest feminine Initiates have always been instructed in the work of perfecting this image-building faculty of the Spirit by the Hierarchy of Virgo, the Lords of Wisdom. Hence it is that Virgo is represented as perfected woman, bearing a sheaf of wheat in her hand.

Wheat has borne a mystic significance in all Schools of Initiation, being representative of the sacred life essence, conserved and lifted to the head, as a source of mental and psychic power.

The Holy Mary, under this divine tutelage, was born

when the Sun, centered in Virgo, was flooding the Earth with its sacred force.

On that most mystic night, when the rays of the Sun in Capricorn encircle the Earth and the new "Sun Child" is born to redeem the world from winter's darkness and death, the starry Madonna Goddess of Virgo stands upon the eastern horizon, holding aloft her gleaming sheaf of wheat—symbol of eternal life—in greeting to the holy Babe.

Within man must the conserved and transmuted life essence form the radiant staff of life that "buds" before he can know the glorious joys of the holiest of all nights.

Since the loss of spiritual understanding in relation to the holy mysteries of conception and birth, the race idea has been built about thoughts of pain and fear and death. These are all crystallizing in their effect, and have caused childbirth to become the dreaded ordeal it is at present.

In the coming age the pain of physical labor will be exchanged for mental and spiritual labor, which will be beautiful and inspiring. Generation must be accompanied by regenerative living. Conception must first of all be a mental process. When these ideals have been generally accepted and demonstrated, imperfect, mal-formed, and diseased, bodies will be a thing of the past. The birth of children will be like the coming of spring flowers.

Walt Whitman, America's foremost seer-poet, expressed motherhood's high calling thus:

*Woman, be not dismayed!  
Thy task encompasseth all;  
Thou art the gateway of the body  
Thou art the gateway of the soul.*

## Chapter III

### ***Prenatal Adventures of the Human Spirit***

*What is the human body but a constellation of the same powers that formed the stars in the sky? The body of man is his home; the architect who builds it is the astral world. The carpenters at one time are Jupiter, at another Mars, at one time Taurus, at another Orion. Man is a sun and a moon and a heaven filled with stars.—Paracelsus*

#### PREPARATION FOR BIRTH

The adventures of the human Spirit as it prepares to come into physical existence are threefold. The first adventure is conception, the second the experiences of the prenatal epoch, and the third is the birth into physical embodiment. All three of these celestial adventures are taken under guidance and direction of Zodiacal Hierarchies.

When the Ego has fully assimilated the experiences of its last Earth incarnation, it has reached the highest of the three heavens in which human consciousness is active at this time. The Third Heaven is a world of pure spirit, and the Ego which has risen out of the worlds of form exists there in human spirit only, for the "seeds" or "germinal ideas" are there only in latency. It is there that the Four Celestial Guardians who have charge of the cosmic records, Taurus-Scorpio and Leo-Aquarius, accord the Earth-directed Ego permission to view the spiritual outline of the life to come and the principal events thereof by which it may work out another part of its destiny and liquidate karmic debts accumulated during previous Earth sojourns.

Note that what the Ego sees at this time is only the *outline* of the coming incarnation; it must by its own

initiative supply all details. This panoramic preview of the approaching earth life, with the decisions the Ego forms concerning it, makes an indelible impression upon the consciousness which can never be quite forgotten and accounts for the vague and haunting familiarity which oftentimes accompanies many of our high moments and vivid experiences in life. Sensitives, even those not able to see, often feel that they have lived through certain incidents, somewhere, sometime.

During the repose in spirit, the Ego is bathed in supernal light and transcendent harmony. It lives and moves and has its being in ineffable bliss. What oxygen is to the atmosphere of the Earth plane, the essence of *Love* is to the higher heavenly realms. Hence, the Ego always chooses rightly and wisely. In the light of this knowledge no life burden is ever too hard. St. Paul has said that "we are never given more than we can bear." If sometimes it appears otherwise to us here, that is due to our limited mortal vision. We have lost the clear and perfect perspective possessed by the Spirit "up there."

An individual carries about with him continually in his aura a scintillant outline of his chosen life brought down from the heaven world. Sensitives, if they do not "see," often "feel" these influences and are thus able to predict with apparently uncanny exactness certain experiences they are to meet.

Let it be always remembered, however, that the manner in which an individual meets these destined experiences and the train of causes thus set into motion belong entirely to his own freedom of choice. He can work in accordance with Cosmic Law and go far toward liquidating the causation of past mistakes, or he can set his will in direct opposition to the workings of that Law and thus add to his karmic toll, nullifying the labor and frustrating the purpose of an entire human incarnation.

These inner-plane truths should be given to children in simple form in their kindergarten days, and must before



a new race of men and women can accomplish the high destiny awaiting them.

#### THE DESCENT TOWARD PHYSICAL EMBODIMENT

To the accompaniment of the music of the spheres, the returning Spirit begins its descent toward the Earth plane. In the realms of thought and desire, it attracts nuclei of mental and emotional substance in exact attunement to the keynote of its own mental and desire-body seed atoms. These seed atoms vibrate according to rhythms established in the previous incarnation by the use made of these particular substances.

A life given over to low, sensual desires or to materialistic thinking cannot set the atomic rate of seed atoms sufficiently high to attract clean and pure desire stuff or inspirational and altruistic thought material.

Like attracts like on all planes of being. "Man is truly a slave to his past but the master of his future."

The moment of birth occurs at the time when the Sun, Moon, and planets are in just the right position to reflect certain aspects of the forces poured out by the Twelve Zodiacal Hierarchies in precisely that measure which the incoming Ego has earned. These forces are stamped upon the vital body when the new-born infant draws its first breath, usually at the first cry, and so directly condition the body and indirectly the environment and affairs for the coming Earth pilgrimage.

The incarnational cycle of man is thus surrounded and permeated with the blessings of the Starry Guardians from its inception until the Ego's ultimate absorption or at-one-ment in and with Divinity. The powers of Heaven and Earth unite in assisting the reincarnating Spirit to build new vehicles when it makes its preparation for another life cycle upon the Earth plane. According to Madame Blavatsky, the twelve great Zodiacal or Creative Hierarchies project their shadows to help the human Spirit fashion his bodies.

## THE DESCENT ASTROLOGICALLY CONSIDERED

From the fiery Aries is projected the initial impulses of life. The origin of all life is a seed. Spiritually or metaphysically, the "seed of life" is the "germinal Idea"—the impalpable, formless Idea. It is to this spiritual, luminous seed of life that Paracelsus refers when he says: "The fruits of water are born from the seed of Aries." And again, he describes this seed as being "outwardly cold and moist, and inwardly hot and dry." Aries, the throne and dominion of spiritual being, contains a miniature pattern of the head—a perfect image, the intricacies of the ear and eye, and all the ramifications of the cranial nerves, all functioning accurately and perfectly centered in spirit, operating through channels of spirit.

From Taurus comes the first projection of form patterns, the beginnings of life limited in space. The Taurean projection bears the spiritual impress of the throat and larynx; it radiates the image of the throat center, a seat of the creative power which is destined to become the Rose of Light in the larynx. Christ Jesus demonstrated the perfection of this ideal when He declared "My words are spirit and they are life."

The Hierarchy of Gemini unites the forces of life with form so that spirit becomes indwelling. Gemini gives the pattern of dual forces, the arms and vital centers of breath, the lungs. The impress of Gemini is on all dual body organs.

The two feminine Hierarchies, Cancer and Virgo, are powerful spiritual centers through which intuition and wisdom manifest. They project the image of the stomach and intestines, which *assimilate* the "bread of life" type of the divine Wisdom or Truth, the *manna* which comes down from heaven.

Leo is the astral focus of the brilliant Lords of Flame who radiate from their own light-bodies the nucleus or germ of man's physical or outer body. The Christ Spirit is keyed to Leo, which is also the fundamental keynote of

the human archetype. When the human race comes into the knowledge of its divine heritage it will realize that it inhabits, literally, a *body of light*.

The Lords of Libra give the pattern for the kidneys and adrenals in the physical body; Scorpio, the image of the generative organs. Spiritually considered, Libra shadows forth the likeness of the new Adam while Scorpio points to the glorious attainment that follows upon regeneration.

Sagittarius, Capricorn, Aquarius, and Pisces together image the co-ordinated activities of the lower limbs and pedal extremities. When the spiritual centers are awakened in the feet and knees, man "shall walk and not be weary, he shall run and not be faint." Physiologically, Sagittarius projects the image of the thighs, symbol of support. Spiritually, Sagittarius pictures that great mystery which we know as mind—a radiation from the Lords of Mind which, when developed, becomes a stepping-stone leading to the gods. Capricorn and Aquarius bear the impress of the perfected desire and etheric bodies; Pisces, the glorious consummation that is to be: man made in the image and likeness of God—a consummation to be reached here on the Earth plane.

#### THE FUNDAMENTAL COLOR AND TONE OF EGOIC EXPRESSION

God, or Cosmic Law, geometrizes. All the building processes of nature follow symmetrical lines. Rhythm and motion are attributes of the Third or Activity Principle of the Trinity.

Every form is built in a matrix of color and emits a continuous tone which is its spiritual keynote, its heart throb of life. All the universe operates in consonance with the music of the spheres and every physical body is fashioned according to this celestial harmony. In the heaven world the archetype of the physical body is attuned to the keynote of the Ego that is to inhabit that body. It is in the head and heart that this soul song has its two modes

of expression—the one in a major key, the other in a minor—by means of which the Ego, more literally than any musician yet knows, sings its way through life. Humanity as a whole is likewise dual. There are two evolutionary classes, the “practicals” and the “mystics.” The former vibrate to the head or “major” tone and the latter to the heart or “minor” key.

Every atom of the body is formed in accordance with the Spirit’s initial archetypal rhythm. The several interpenetrating bodies or principles of man constitute a septenary, each sounding a note of the octave; thus we find that man contains within himself the music of the spheres.

Perfect health means perfect harmony between the notes of all bodies. In consequence of this, music will become an increasingly important factor in the healing of disease as the sense of hearing becomes keener and able to intercept a wider range of tones than is possible with our contemporary equipment. At the present time perfect health is comparatively unknown because the rhythms of the several bodies are not in harmony and are so easily “jangled out of tune.”

Materialistic thinking, emotional excesses of any nature, over-eating, criticism, and gossip are among the many things that disturb the harmonies and react as *disease*. Periods of silence, constructive affirmations, entering into one’s inner nature and there contacting the divine, all serve to restore the tone and rhythm of the several bodies and their harmony as a composite unit. To maintain wholeness and harmony and health—all are synonymous—it is necessary often to “be still and know that I am God.” We must arrive at the state of development where we can say with Paul, regardless of whatsoever transpires around us, that “none of these things move me.” Writes Paracelsus: “As often as a transmutation of color takes place, so often occurs a transmutation of virtues also. There is a latent knowledge of colors just as there are latent colors, and a latent cognition of virtues just as there are latent virtues.”

Initiation signifies new growth, expansion of faculties and progress beyond the old status. Life is the great Initiator, and the various steps or degrees experienced by the prenatal Ego are a series of Initiations in preparation for physical existence. These degrees are outlined in that great cosmic picture book of destiny, the twelve constellations of the heavens, which in the ultimate may be described as the building processes of Fire, Air, Water, and Earth.

#### MONTHLY CHART IN PRENATAL DEVELOPMENT

In prenatal life weight increases largely by growth and division of cells. Weight after birth increases in size rather than in the number of cells in the body. Centers for the principal bones of the body appear by the end of the second month of foetal life.

The germ cells (female ova, male sperma) are easily distinguished under the microscope. The ova are larger and less active than the sperma. Both are complete living organisms and together become avenues for the incoming of an immortal Spirit. The ovum is the largest body cell. Ova form in little pockets or follicles of the ovaries. One of the follicles containing a single ovum matures each lunar month between puberty and menopause. This ovum has its means of escape through the ruptured wall of the ovary and enters the Fallopian tube. Only one spermium enters the body of the matured ovum, leaving its tail outside. When the fertilization of the ovum has taken place it begins to divide into two cells, then four, and so on until in nine months one fertilized ovum has grown five million per cent.

The cells of the tiny embryo are termed soma or body cells. Of these are formed the organs of the body.

The first weeks of the tiny embryological development are a sealed book for *materia medica*. It is only by means of extended spiritual faculties that this work of the incoming Spirit may be followed. The Carnegie Laboratory of Embryology has assembled only fourteen specimens of the third week.

From an unidentified newspaper clipping we quote the following article by Gobind Behari Lat. It bears a New York date line, Dec. 17, 1942, and is titled: *Discoveries about Embryos May Aid in Control of Sex*. "Dramatic discoveries about one to two-week old human embryos that may greatly aid in development of means for controlling the sex of the unborn child came to light today.

"The possibility that future scientists might use combined methods of eugenic selection and chemical treatments, to be given in the earliest embryonic period of life to produce either boys or girls, is suggested in two independent scientific investigations just published.

"One discovery is that for the first time, a human embryo only seven and a half days old has been scientifically detected and thoroughly studied. Another embryo nine and a half days old was similarly observed.

#### INVESTIGATED BY PAIR

"The earliest known human embryos have been found and investigated by Drs. A. T. Hertig and J. C. Rock of Boston, it is revealed in the annual year book of the Carnegie Institution of Washington, published today.

"The 11 and 12-day-old human embryos are so small that the whole body can pass, lengthwise, easily through the letter 'O' as printed here."

From studies on such early human embryos scientists will learn much about how the physical and mental development of man occurs and how it can be influenced in the earliest stages of pre-birth growth.

#### MALE INSECTS

"Concerning the possibility of scientific 'predetermination of sex' in human offspring, Drs. John W. Gowen and Ronald H. Nelson of the Iowa Agricultural Station, Ames, Iowa, are reported to have succeeded in breeding

fruit flies in such a way that a special strain of male insects are developed. These male insects always produced male progeny, irrespective of the female partners.

“Other scientists have succeeded in producing 100 per cent females in such insects. Thus, for the first time men of science have found a key principle for development at will of animals of male or female sex alone.

“The application to human beings of this technique offers great complications. In principle, however, it means it might be possible to develop special families capable of producing either only boys or only girls.”

The above quoted article holds much of interest for the thoughtful student. However, material science *alone* will never be successful in regulating the sex of incoming Egos. This power rests with the guardianship of Celestial Eierarchies, the recording Angels who assist human Egos to re-embodiment. The matter of sex is entirely a karmic one and cannot be frustrated or altered by the experiments of material science, as such.

The first stage to be investigated by physical science is the globular mass of cells called the morula (little mulberry). The embryo is a cluster of minute cells. The second is the blastula stage when the embryo takes on a hollow U-shaped form. By certain infoldings three layers are gradually formed. Each germ-layer gives rise to certain specified organs and systems. For example, from the ectoderm are formed the skin and entire nervous system, sense organs, pineal and pituitary glands, and adrenals; from the endoderms come the alimentary canal, thyroid and thymus glands, larynx, trachea, and lungs; and from the mesoderm, the voluntary muscles and sexual glands. Also from the mesoderm develops a particular type of connective tissue from which are derived heart, blood and lymph vessels, the skeleton and the involuntary muscles. In a few weeks the embryo develops structures which the evolutionary process has required many millions of years to bring forth.

By the third week the embryo has become a minute

plant-like structure with a line across it. By the fourth week the line opens into the plant at both ends. One opening becomes the mouth. The cavity within the embryo will divide and become the thoracic and abdominal cavities. Then a series of lines appear and divide the plant-like structure into segments.

One of the most revolutionary steps in human evolution was the development of the vertebral column. Three different types were developed before the present one was perfected. All three types appear in the embryo. The bony vertebrae, skull and limb bones first appear as cartilage. Arches and bronchial clefts, which belonged to an earlier stage of human development, first appear in the human embryo by the end of the third week. The way these develop into the intricacy of the human throat is one of embryology's most fascinating phases.

From one of the arches 'which in the shark become the jaws' the human foetus develops the lower jaw and two of the three small bones of the inner ear. The second and the third of the gill-arches become thyroid cartilages; the fourth, the epiglottis; the fifth, the wind-pipe cartilage. As the human embryo will develop lungs for breathing, it has no need for gills so the gill-clefts do not break through. After the sixth week no outer trace is visible, but around one end of the first cleft the foetal ear begins to form. From the remaining gill-clefts are formed the Eustachian tube (the passage from the mouth to the lymphatic cavity). The lobe, or soft lower part of the ear, appears in the sixth month and is found in animals below the apes. At the eighth month the rim of the foetal ear begins to fold in, thus shutting out sounds of the inner world.

The second bronchial arch, from which fish embryos develop gill-covers and muscles, is supplied by the seventh cranial nerve. It later becomes the face nerve supplying the ears, nose, mouth, and eyes.

Six branches of the aorta supply these fish-like arches of the human foetus. The third pair becomes part of the two internal carotid arteries. The left branch of the fourth



pair forms the bend of the aorta. Of the sixth pair, one becomes the stem of the pulmonary artery to the aorta, thus allowing the right ventricle of the heart to pump impure blood into the aorta and on into the placenta. At birth it closes and the blood from the pulmonary artery must then pass into the lungs. This closing of a gill-arch artery used for placental circulation occurs when the new born infant utters the first cry, for the Ego is then prepared to use oxygenized air from its own lungs instead of from the mother's blood.

The four-months-old foetus is attached by the umbilical cord to the then fully formed placenta which consists largely of connective tissue and blood vessels that interlace with blood vessels in the uterus. The foetus derives nourishment through the umbilical cord.

After birth the umbilical cord is tied and severed. This cuts off the infant's oxygen intake and carbon outlet. Then a miracle happens—a blood clot forms between the navel and the liver in what was the umbilical vein which stops the circulation in that direction and prevents the infant from bleeding to death. As a result of that clot, two blood vessels cease to function and disappear. Another clot forms in the vessel which connected the aorta with the pulmonary artery and it also goes out of circulation.

Another necessary change occurs before the infant is tempered to use lungs and oxygen. Through prenatal development there is an opening between the right and left auricles and the foramen ovale, but with the closing of the vessel from the pulmonary artery to the aorta the blood is forced into the lungs, then into the pulmonary veins and after that into the left auricle. Pressure in the left auricle closes the foramen ovale between the two auricles. The clots and closure of certain blood vessels and the foramen ovale change entirely the new-born's circulation. The infant now gets oxygen through the lungs by its own breathing effort. After the first breath the lungs are never free of oxygen so long as life lasts.

If the opening between the left and right auricles is not completed, then the arterial and venous blood mingle and a "blue baby" is the result.

The lungs are like complex sponges, composed of minute pockets of air cells, all opening into funnels, these in turn into tubes, and the tubes into the right and left bronchi which pass into the trachea or wind-pipe.

The human nervous system is the most intricate and complex of all living mechanisms. It is the principal seat of past evolution and future development. In the first month a depression or trough appears on the surface of the outer germ layer. The upper edges gradually come together forming the neural tube. In the third month this tube expands at one end into three sacs or vesicles. The first of these three then divide into five vesicles. The walls of these hollow sacs will develop into the brain and the sacs themselves will form the ventricles of the brain. The remainder of this neural tube will become the spinal column or cord. In the fourth month this is as long as the vertebral column; after this the column grows faster than the cord. At birth the cord reaches only to the third lumbar vertebra, and from that vertebra to the end of the column the cord is represented by the long terminal filament.

At birth all cells of the nervous system are present. The new-born will develop no new brain cells, but certain structural changes will take place in the nerves which are in control of the motor mechanism.

By the eighth week the embryo develops into male or female. The beginnings of both the male and female organs are present up to this time; but from now on, through processes of change, growth, and atrophy, the embryo becomes either male or female. Most plants and lower animals are hermaphrodites (Hermes-Aphrodite)—that is, double sexed.

Although sex glands or gonads show no structural difference at the sixth week as to future sex, yet microscopic examination shows definite demarcations. In a female the cells are large and rounded; in a male small

and long, ending in a fine filament or tail.

The work of the kidneys is to preserve constancy in the blood stream and to remove impurities from the body. Three types of kidney are evolved. All three appear in prenatal life. The first renal organs to be evolved become appendages of the sex glands; the second or Wolfian body becomes part of the seminiferous duct in the male, but in the female remains as the parovarium, a vestige in the broad ligament between the uterus and pelvic wall. Finally true kidneys develop.

The alimentary canal first appears as a closed tube which later opens at each end, the upper part becoming the mouth cavity. Below this opening four crevices appear as fish-like gill-clefts, and below these a single saclike structure which divides into right and left lungs. From the region of crevices, an outgrowth of the alimentary canal develops into thyroid and thymus glands. From the upper end of embryonic canals develops the pituitary. The stomach is merely an enlargement of the canal. Below the stomach two outgrowths of the canal develop into liver and pancreas.

The embryo at the bronchial cleft stage has a tubular heart of four chambers. When the lungs begin to develop, the first chamber becomes part of the auricle, the fourth chamber part of the ventricle. These divide into right and left. The right passes venous blood to the placenta, the left receives blood and sends it to the body. Many interesting variations occur in both heart and blood vessel structure which show great changes since man's body developed from a water-breathing into an air-breathing creature.

Sometimes a heart is found with vestiges of valves belonging to animals no higher than the frog, such undevelopment showing a lack of alertness on the part of the Ego in body building.

During the first three months of the prenatal journey the incoming Ego is cared for or sponsored by hosts of angelic presences. It literally lives, moves, and has its

being in their brooding love and protecting care.

During the fourth month certain spiritual channels are opened so that an individual "signature" may be impressed upon the developing matrix or form. The Ego contacts its own keynote sign, and its particular power is focused upon the embryo. During the fifth and sixth months the forces of Love and Wisdom become the keynote of development. The seventh month is a crucial and subtle time for the incarnating Spirit. It involves a microscopic contest, as it were between spirit and flesh for positions of supremacy. The reincarnating Ego at this time contacts desire forces from the past and their impress marks the body in the making. Apropos of this fact the following statement is of interest. It was made at a meeting held in New York City for the Institute of Human Relations. Intolerance was characterized as a health and medical problem by Sister Mary de Lourdes of St. Joseph's College at West Hartford, Connecticut. She said: "If parents would save their children from the evils of prejudice they should understand the warning of psychologists that from the seventh month on the prejudices of adults begin to tell on their children."

With the eighth month the Spirit passes under the rod of mortality. "All that is quickened of flesh must die." "Flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of heaven." The ninth month ushers in the birth time upon the physical plane.

The first three months after the Spirit enters into this outer physical world (corresponding to the last three signs of the zodiacal cycle, Capricorn, Aquarius, and Pisces) the new-born babe is still in close contact with its Celestial Guardians. Blessed indeed are the eyes that see these tender and loving ministrations! The Poet Wordsworth gave utterance to a profound truth when he said, "Heaven lies about us in our infancy."

There is a continuous evolution during the prenatal period, synchronizing form, color, and tone. There is a chromatic scale of color as well as of sound. During the

first three months the Ego responds dominantly to the blue tones; during the next interval of three months or "moons" to the yellow color notes; and the seventh, eighth, and ninth months to the birth color of red. After birth the tone or shade resulting from the blending of these primary color notes reveals the Ego's status in evolutionary development in an aura of gleaming color. Paracelsus declares: "If I have manna in my constitution I can attract manna from the heavens. There is no compound in nature which is not a little sun and a little moon, a son of the heavenly sun and a daughter of the celestial moon. All things upon the earth have their star (center of attractive force). The influence of the stars is from supercelestial conjunctions and unions of stars in the firmament with the stars of things below."

THE EGO'S LINK WITH PHYSICAL EXISTENCE—  
SEED ATOMS AND THE SILVER CORD

*God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body.—I Cor. 15:38.*

*All things have seed and in seed all things are contained, for nature first fabricates the form and afterwards she produces and manifests the essence of the thing.*

*It is known to all that if a seed be cast into the earth and concealed there, the latent nature of the seed at the proper time manifests it above the earth and anyone may clearly see what manner of seed has lain in that place. It is the same with the seed of the heart of man. Out of that seed nature produces a body and anyone can see what kind of a heart has been there. Nothing can be hidden in man which is not outwardly marked on him.*

—Paracelsus

We have said that all things originate primarily from a seed. The body of man is no exception. The birth of man is a fourfold event and so also is the transition called death. In order to understand something of these processes of life and death one must study the workings of certain powerful centers of force, the seed atoms. These particular atoms contain the sublimated essence of the experiences of all the Ego's past existences. Their stored-up forces are permanent and indestructible because they are part of the spiritual nature, and into them have been incorporated fruits garnered throughout the vast cycle of Earth lives.

The physical seed atom is located in the heart; it survives death. This it is that the Psalmist refers to when he sings: "Thy heart shall live forever."

The seed atom is man's Book of Destiny, the arbiter of his fate, both during his physical embodiment and also during the interim spent in higher or superphysical planes.

As man possesses certain vehicles necessary for his evolutionary development—namely, physical, etheric, desire, and mental bodies—similarly, the Earth also possesses vehicles or envelopes of a like nature. It is of this earth-body material that the Ego builds its own finer or invisible sheaths. The Spirit of man is bound to the cosmic wheel of birth and death (the larger life) and so must pass in alternating cycles through these various planes, learning by many and varied experiences therein.

In order to function on any plane of existence it is necessary to use a body composed of the material of that plane, and a body can only be built through the medium of a seed atom of the same nature as the needed material. Therefore we say that both birth and death are fourfold events in the experience of every Spirit.

The primordial, indestructible seed atoms of the four vehicles making up man's composite being were given by certain groups of celestial Hierarchies who guide the destiny of this Solar System. They are germinal patterns (Ideas) in the likeness of which the bodies are formed. The seed atom of the physical body was given by the Lords

of Flame or Leo; the seed atom of the vital body, by the Lords of Wisdom or Virgo; the seed atom of the desire body by the Lords of Individuality or Libra; and that of the mental sheath by the Lords of Mind or Sagittarius.

The formative and combining processes are under the Lords of Form or Scorpio. Their work is to amalgamate the essences of Fire, Earth, and Air, and blend these with their own spiritual Water. In man, Air symbolizes the mental powers; consequently, the better mind one moulds in the course of a life, the wider and freer is the scope allowed in building for the next life, and the purer and the finer will be the mental substance with which he builds. The finer the quality of the mind essence, the more amenable it is to the control of Spirit, and the more receptive it is to the impulses from the inner realms. "Be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind" is the admonition given by one who knew the importance of properly attuning the various seed atoms by clean living.

Fire represents the desire nature of man. The subjugation and purification of desire determines the gauge of the desire seed atom located in the liver. The importance of the liver and its future development will be dealt with at length subsequently.

The inmost core of every man's physical body is a spark of celestial fire which comes from the Hierarchy of Luminous Flame, the Lords of Leo, who gave to man the germ (seed atom) of the dense body, the temple of his indwelling Spirit. The rhythm of every other atom of the body is set to the tune of this one, which in turn sounds the keynote of the Spirit. An undeveloped Ego emits a low, unsteady note, the atoms of the body moving discordantly. One who is spiritually awakened emits a note in a higher key and the body atoms rotate in harmonious motion producing bodies of a finer texture and subtler organization. Being more highly sensitized and capable of more delicate adjustments, it is the more easily disturbed by discordant conditions within or without; hence, for such it becomes not only important but necessary carefully

to practice poise, balance, and self-control at all times in order to maintain bodily health and mental efficiency.

After the Ego's experiences in the inner worlds between Earth lives are concluded and the Spirit prepares to return to the Earth plane, the seed atoms set the gauge of the quantity and quality of material to be used in the formation of their respective new bodies. When the previous life has been devoted to material or worldly pursuits the material attracted to the physical body will be comparatively gross and heavy with little of the finer substances of the Desire World and Etheric Region built into their corresponding vehicles. The low vibratory rate of the bodies of such an Ego makes it difficult for the mind to rend the veil or to contact inner-plane truths.

The more spiritually developed the Ego, the finer the material it attracts to itself for building future bodies, and the greater the force which is concentrated within it. Hence, the early manifestation of genius and the development of the so-called child prodigy.

The seed atom of the mind is located in the head; it vibrates to a spiritual blue. The desire body atom is centered in the liver; it harmonizes with the red ray. The etheric seed atom is in the solar plexus and correlates to yellow. The physical seed atom is located in the heart; it may reflect any one of all the colors, the one it radiates being in accordance with the evolutionary development of the Spirit. Each seed atom sounds or "hums" the tone of its own body.

It is to be noted, speaking accurately, that the seed atoms are imbedded, not in the physical organs to which they are severally assigned, but in their etheric counterparts. For instance, the seed atom of the physical body is contained in its etheric double. These etheric or vital organs act as an entrance gate for the inflow of mind, desire, etheric, and physical forces. When the vital body is shed the seed atoms of both the physical and vital bodies are carried by the desire body.

One of the most important performances of the Ego



during the period of prenatal development is that of fashioning the silver cord. This cord is one of the Ego's principal means of linking its lower to its higher vehicles. It is the "cable tow" of the Masons.

In man's present state of evolution this cord is tripartite. This cord's structure is complex. One end is

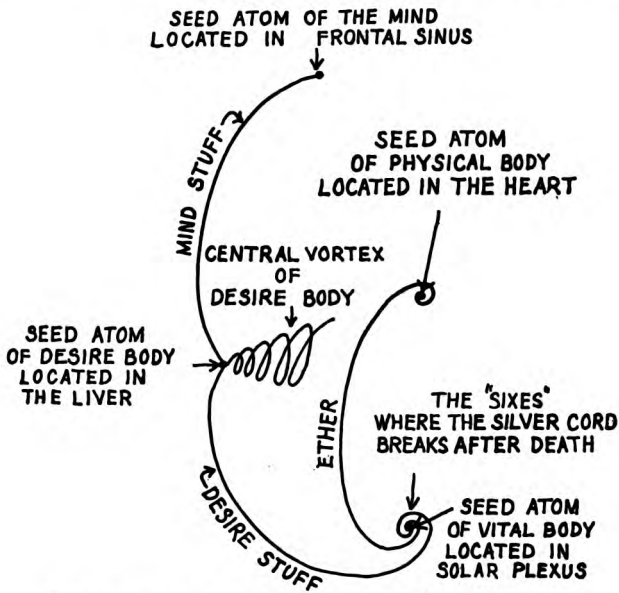


DIAGRAM OF THE THREEFOLD SILVER CORD

rooted in the heart and is made of etheric substance. Another end, composed of desire stuff, is rooted in the liver. When these two ends meet in the seed atom of the vital body at the solar plexus, a foetus quickens. A third part, made of mind stuff, rises in the seed atom of mind located in the frontal sinus, seat of the Human Spirit. This part passes between the pituitary and pineal glands downward, connecting with the thyroid and thymus, the spleen and adrenals before uniting with the second part of the cord in the liver. The part connecting the physical and etheric bodies is built during the prenatal interval, the Spirit

working under the direction of angelic hosts. The second part connecting the etheric and desire bodies is built during childhood. The third part connecting the desire and mental sheaths is completed at about the age of twenty-one. The Masonic Cable Tow is also tripartite and must be tied in three places.

The most important steps connected with higher spiritual development can take place only after the mental section of the cord has been established. Later in the processes of high Initiateship (the Christed consciousness) a fourth part of the cord will be developed, giving a more direct or closer connection between head and heart.

The silver cord, being one of the most important and intricate possessions of the Spirit, is outlined in the archetype and is an exact replica of this spirit pattern. Ecclesiastes 4:12: "And if one prevail against him, two shall withstand him: and a threefold cord is not quickly broken."

As previously stated, the Spirit of man is linked with the physical body by means of the silver cord. The mental portion of this cord is capable of indefinite extension. This enables the Ego, when functioning apart from the physical body as an Invisible Helper, to travel to the ends of the Earth on errands of love and mercy and yet retain the "life line" with its physical vehicle. The "threefold cord" is not easily broken; when it is severed it means death to the physical body. This key is contained in the story of the resurrection of Lazarus which pertains to an awakening of the higher consciousness, a spiritual Illumination, and not to the resuscitation of a dead body.

"Enlarge the place of thy tent, and let them stretch forth the curtains of thine habitations: spare not, lengthen thy cords, and strengthen thy stakes: for thou shalt break forth on the right hand and on the left; and thy seed shall inherit the Gentiles, and make the desolate cities to be inhabited." (Isaiah 54:2-3).

These verses of Isaiah are intensely interesting when interpreted in relation to the development of man himself

rather than in connection with external events. "Tent" in biblical symbology refers to the mind, and "city" to a state of consciousness.

The uniting of the first and second parts of the magnetic life line, or etheric cord, occurs about the fourth month of gestation when the Ego first becomes indwelling. When man reaches his majority at twenty-one, as before stated, the mental portion has been developed and linked to the other two which are formed of etheric and desire substance. The cord is then threefold in its constitution, linking the physical, desire, and mental bodies. A fourth part, formed of pure spirit, has been developed through regeneration by a few advanced souls who have reached Illumination.

The final severing of this cord marks the time of the separation of the physical from the higher bodies in death. The great king of wisdom, Solomon, describes this operation in his mystic chant of dissolution as given in the twelfth chapter of Ecclesiastes: ["The almond tree shall flourish and the grasshopper shall be a burden, and desire shall fail; because man goeth to his long home, and the mourners go about the streets: Or ever the silver cord be loosed, or the golden bowl be broken . . . Then shall the dust return to the Earth as it was; and the Spirit shall return unto God who gave it."]

#### PRENATAL ADVENTURES ASTROLOGICALLY CONSIDERED

It is to the majestic science of Astrology that we must turn for answers to many of the seemingly insoluble mysteries of life, and in a study of the Prenatal Epoch we shall find a satisfactory solution to most of these problems.

The Prenatal Epoch is based upon the hypothesis that the degree held by the Moon at conception is the degree (or its opposite) of the Ascendant at birth, while the degree ascending at conception (or its opposite) will be that of the Moon at birth.

The Epoch thesis is an interesting argument in favor

of rebirth and the laws governing the prenatal adventures of the Spirit as they are outlined in this work. Many birth charts which are heavy with afflictions show Epoch charts in which great soul attainment in the past is evident.

The birth Sun in Aries gives the Epoch Sun in Cancer which sometimes produces the strangely incongruous blending of the mystic Moon and the dynamic Mars. In the "old soul" this blending produces the perfect polarity of Fire and Water which pertains to Initiation.

The Sun in Taurus at birth gives an Epoch Sun in Leo, which adds the persistence of Earth to the inspiration of Fire and embellishes the life with both love and beauty.

The birth Sun in Gemini gives the Epoch Sun of Virgo. Both these signs are set to the mercurial rhythms, and Mercury is the Winged Messenger of the Gods. Earth and Air tend to lift ever upward upon the spiral of spirit.

The Aquarian nativity has a Taurean Epoch Sun. The beauty ray of Taurus is united with the idealism of Uranus which tends toward the production of New Age art and the inspiration of New Age messengers.

The Piscean birth gives a Gemini Epoch. The Piscean nativity is distinctly Neptunian, with spiritual unfoldment coming naturally as the Ego works during the prenatal epoch, first under the forces of Mercury alone and later under the mercurial forces merged with those of its higher octave, Neptune.

Generally, in relation to the child, the Moon represents the mother, the Sun the father, and the Ascendant the child itself. Their placement relative to one another defines the Ego's development, besides picturing its past relationship with the Egos who are now to be father and mother.

#### WHY MORE EGOS ARE BORN BEFORE NOON THAN AFTER NOON

"Nature does not welcome birth of babies as kindly in the afternoon as before noon. She is particularly rough

on the little ones between 3 P.M. and 6 P.M. Don't ask us why. No reason is known, only guesses. But the facts are indisputable. They rest on a statistical study, reported from the Division of Maternity, Infancy and Child Hygiene, of the New York Department of Health, by J. Yerushalmy. The facts are:

“One: There are more births between midnight and noon than between noon and midnight.

“Two: There are more stillbirths in the afternoon than the ‘morning’ hours.

“Three: There are more deaths of babies under one month among those born in the afternoon than in the earlier hours.

“Four: Both these death rates are highest among the 3 to 6 P.M. births.

“Five: There are more ‘operative’ deliveries of babies in the afternoon than in the morning hours.

“These are not chance figures of one time or one place, or even of one nation. Except the operative deliveries, they were reported first in 1929, in a study of births in New York state by J. V. de Porte, M.D.

“Almost precisely the same conditions showed up in England in a study reported two years ago by A. Bradford Hill. Finally, Dr. Yarushalmy repeated these studies again in New York State in 1936, and then in the last two years went more deeply into the figures without shaking their validity.

“As to why nature prefers the morning for babies there are many guesses. There is temperature, barometric pressure, light, and endocrine gland activity during early hours. The one best summation is that man is a creature of his environment and something in the environment favors babies coming in the early hours.”

The newspaper article quoted above is of special significance to our study because it offers scientific evidence of the truth of the statement that there are certain subtle astrological influences released during the day which affect

man physically, mentally, and morally. The writer speaks more truly, perhaps, than he knows when he adds, "Man is a creature of his environment and something in the environment favors babies coming in the early morning hours."

Without analyzing the case too closely, the fact is at once seen that the hours from midnight to noon are those when the Sun is ascending, having passed the nadir, or the lowest point of its diurnal course. The stillbirths and deaths of babies born in the afternoon point to the influence of the eighth house, called the House of Death, where the solar energies are weak; note that the death rates are highest from 3 to 6 P.M., which almost certainly includes the eighth house and part of the seventh. The operative deliveries also indicate the lowered vital forces, due to the descending Sun.

The Moon also bears a potent and deeply mystical relationship to the human Ego both during the Epoch interval at birth, and in the growth cycle after birth. An Ego brought to birth in the full tide of the Moon's glory is destined to know the full realization of earthly honor, prestige, and glory. The Ego ushered in by the dim or invisible light of the New Moon will have the opportunity of climbing far upon the pathway of spiritual power which enables him to pass within the portal of Illumination. That Ego which takes human embodiment during the dark phases of the Moon will know much of pain and sorrow, having elected in this life to begin the liquidation of a heavy debt of tears.

The twenty-eight phases of the Moon, fourteen from the Full to the New and fourteen from the New to the Full, affect significantly the body-in-the-making as well as the life and affairs of the human family generally. The loss of this Moon knowledge is shown symbolically in the Osiris legend, in that the body of Osiris was divided into fourteen parts and scattered over the world to be searched for in sorrow by Isis, the soul.

## Chapter IV

### ***Physiological Processes Spiritually Interpreted***

*After such a wonderful method has God created water as the first matter of nature, so often and weak a substance, yet from it as a fruit is born all things, even stones and metals. The very hardest from the very softest—so that from the water—fire should issue forth beyond the grasp of man's intelligence, but not beyond the power of nature.*

*A blooming flower cannot be made out of mud nor a man from material clay, and he who denies the formative power of the astral light and believes that form grows out of earth, believes that something can be taken out of the body which does not exist.—Paracelsus.*

Human embryology is the history of man from the fertilization of the ovum until birth from the womb. As absorbingly fascinating and far-reaching as this subject is, when we combine it with *occult* embryology (which reveals the work of the angelic hosts) it becomes, perhaps, the most majestic of sciences, worthy of the profound study of every spiritual aspirant and academic scientist.

#### PROTOPLASM

Protoplasm has been termed the great mystery of nature. Protoplasm and chromatin are the two basic elements of physical life. Biologists and bacteriologists have disputed as to which is the more ancient, with later investigations favoring chromatin. The occult investigator, who is able to study the mysteries of life beyond the realm of the visible, understands that this finding is true.

The word *protoplasm* was first used in 1846 and was applied only to substance within vegetable cells. This same substance in animal cells was termed *sarcode*; later the word *protoplasm* came into general use as applying to the mysterious life substance which constitutes the principal portion of a cell, whether vegetable or animal.

Protoplasm is an almost colorless jellylike substance. When highly magnified, it is seen to consist of a fine meshwork in which lie a number of small granules of protein, starch, oil, and various other substances scattered throughout.

The protoplasm of a living cell generally contains two or more irregular spaces filled with fluids that change and merge into one another as the protoplasmic mass rotates. These are termed *vacuoles*, and they vary in different types of cells; some contain loosely packed protoplasm and a great deal of liquid, while others have denser protoplasm. In young cells of growing tissues the protoplasm is generally very close and granular.

Each cell lives its own individual life within its own cell walls, a part of which is the definite and orderly rotation of its protoplasmic content. The nucleus, attached by filaments of protoplasm to the cell-wall, tends to remain the stationary center of the cell. No material scientist has ever been able, even upon the most minute examination, to differentiate between the life processes of vegetable and animal life. This knowledge is reserved for the investigator who approaches its mysteries with a reverence like unto that of a minister kneeling before an altar in prayer. The qualifications for a deeper understanding of life processes are always clean hands, a pure heart, and a mind filled with reverential awe for the infinite love and wisdom embodied in the Divine Plan.

Spiritual truth must be spiritually discerned, declares Paul. There are innumerable hosts of invisible beings who aid in bringing life into activity on the physical plane. To know when and how the protoplasmic cell will evolve into



plant, animal, or man requires, first of all, the ability to read in God's Cosmic Picture Book, where one may study the Archetypal Pattern and observe the working hosts of Invisibles who are aiding in the great evolutionary scheme of the universe.

## CELL LIFE

Nowhere, perhaps, in all the course of human evolution does the law of harmony and rhythm manifest itself more beautifully or more exactly than in the marvelous and complicated processes of cell life.

The majority of growing tissue cells undergo a very elaborate process of change and transformation termed *mitosis* or *karyokinesis*. In the concentrated granules in the nucleus is imbedded a substance of strange and subtle power. It possesses no distinctive shape until the cell is ready to divide. Then it arranges itself in long skeinlike filaments which later, in response to unseen forces, begin to bend and curve and to assume a horseshoe shape. This subtle substance is known as *chromosome* (colored matter).

The principal point of interest in all this complicated process is that each species of plant and animal life has its own specific and fixed number of chromosomes and that each species duplicates the same rhythmic motion in cell division.

The evolutionary status of development appears to set its signature upon these differentiations. In certain life forms just entering the animal life wave, as, for instance, in a lowly worm, the number is two. A lily, on the other hand, having reached well nigh a perfect attainment in the flower kingdom, sets its signature in thirteen chromosomes. A human being bears evidence of his status in a mark of forty-eight.

While the chromosomes are individualizing themselves inside the cell, the protoplasmic substance is shaping itself into two faintly gleaming white starlike centers. Emanating

tions like streamers of light radiate from these two starry centers which have assumed positions similar to the north and south poles of a miniature universe, the starry emanations representing the global longitudinal lines.

By rhythmic motion the harmony of the spheres is duplicated in this marvelous "dance of the elements within the cells." The curved and bent chromosomes now unfurl and range themselves along this global formation so they compose its horizontal line, grouping themselves along its equator. Then each chromosome splits in half and begins to move along the longitudinal starry lines, one half toward the north pole and the other toward the south. Here, at each of the poles, the chromosomes and protoplasmic substances are again united. Gradually the thread-like filaments of the chromosomes become less conspicuous as they are resolved into nuclei which surround themselves with a membrane. The protoplasm continues to dance in stately circular motion, and then two cells are born. Each cell now contains a carefully divided half of both the chromosome and protoplasmic content of the original cell.

A cell possesses the power of absorbing oxygen and nutrition, of rebuilding and renewing itself, and of casting off waste or effete matter. In addition, each cell possesses a certain degree of consciousness. Thus, an aggregate of cells produces a certain massed cell consciousness capable of marked and wonderful transformation when guided by a competent and trained mentality. Herein may be found a key to complete body renewal.

A general summary of biology's position may be stated thus: "All living things are but a series of modifications and extensions of one single plan of structure, and all have the same ultimate substance, the mysterious semi-fluid network of protoplasm, as a physical basis of life, and the equally mysterious nuclear substance of chromatin which presides over the movements of protoplasm and is the physical basis for the phenomena of heredity." That which is inherited is not character but merely certain con-

ditioning factors influencing it. Only the physical form is inherited. Temperament, mental capacities, talents, character—these all belong to the individual Ego and are capable of infinite diversification and expansion in accordance with the Ego's development.

Physical construction of three-dimensional life-forms manifests in a specialized threefold manner, namely, protoplasm, the seed ground (feminine); chromatin, the motive power (masculine); and the cell or new life formed by the operations of masculine and feminine. All living things are a manifestation of the positive and negative potencies of God. God, Fire, is ever moving upon the Waters to create forms.

Protoplasm is composed of hydrogen, oxygen, nitrogen, and carbon, occult properties of Fire, Water, Air, and Earth, and the elements of all visible manifestations. Protoplasm constitutes the visible substance of the cell; chromatin, the visible center of heredity. (Again, by *heredity* is meant the tendency of an organism to reproduce characteristics of its progenitors.) The development of physical life is due to the unfolding of energies taken into the body through the direction of chromatin. The evolution of life is the evolving of these energies.

The cell is the lowest stage of individuality known to modern biology. Two of the most important parts of the cell are *cytoplasm* or the main body, and the nucleus or center of life which is imbedded in it. Again, the masculine and feminine work together to produce the *nucleolus*, the third or energy aspect of the Holy Trinity in body-building.

The discovery that every living thing is a single cell or an aggregation of cooperating cells and cell products is the most important biological discovery of modern times. One of the simplest of single-cell animals is the amoeba. When this creature reaches the stage where growth ceases it divides into two amoebae. Each descendant possesses half the substance of the parent; this process continues

until a colony is complete. Material science is at a loss to explain the reason for this division. The occultist perceives that the life impulse of each cell is a fusing of the principles which we know as the masculine and feminine polarities in man, as Fire and Water in nature. On the physical plane these forces do not operate in a perfectly equalized relationship; hence, the inevitability of division. These processes are a reflex of the workings of Aries and Taurus, masculine and feminine Zodiacal Hierarchies, respectively. After the division is effected, the life process comes under Gemini, the third Zodiacal Power, the sign of separateness and division. Apart-ness is the path to individualization on the material plane.

#### THE NUMBER SEVEN IN BODY-BUILDING

The number seven, embodying the trine of spirit placed upon the cross of matter, is a fitting symbol for the workings of the physical body. It is the power of this number which the Celestial Hierarchies have employed most frequently in constructing the marvels of the human body.

Physiology enumerates the seven chief processes of body-building as follows:

1. Cell multiplication and new cell growth.
2. Infolding and outfolding of various cell complexes.
3. Regional thickenings and thinnings.
4. Special changes in groups of cells.
5. Cell migrations or rearrangements.
6. Splitting or fusion of cell groups.
7. Occasional reabsorption of certain areas or parts.

Furthermore, a cell is a cosmos in miniature, with seven principles or spiritual correspondences:

1. The outer cell wall corresponds to the physical body.
2. The inner lining, vitteline or zona pellucida, appearing as an encircling light, corresponds to the vital body.

3. Protoplasm corresponds to the desire body.
4. Individual granules of vitteline correspond to the lower mind.
5. Spaces left by withdrawal of protoplasm correspond to the higher mind.
6. Nucleus represents the spiritualized consciousness.
7. Nucleoli represents the Spirit Fire.

☐ Madame Blavatsky says that *seven* is a word for students and a query to the profane. Why, she asks, should there be such a strange repetition of the number seven in the anatomical structure of man? Why should the heart have four lower cavities and three higher divisions answering so aptly to the septenary human principles separated into two groups, the higher and the lower? Why do the seven nervous plexuses of the body radiate seven rays? And why seven distinct layers in the human skin? ]

In the nucleoli are two distinct conditions: a denser portion in which the true germinal nucleoli float freely. The Spirit of God ever moves on the face of the Waters to create. Whether it be the building of a universe or the fashioning of the most minute cell in an infinitesimal body, the divine process is the same throughout.

There are certain interior strata of the Earth which reflect various life processes manifesting upon its outer surface in the human, animal, plant, and mineral kingdoms. It is only as the scientist becomes sufficiently spiritualized to contact the inner workings of nature that her secrets may be revealed to him. Patterns for all cell division are to be found therein, "stepped down from the heaven worlds under Scorpio, Lords of Form.

☐ *Each cell is a creative thought of God in manifestation.* Every organ in the body is composed of a number of cells possessing intelligence and, in health, moving rhythmically around a central sun or cell possessing a higher degree of intelligence, Thus, every organ is a small scale solar system. The life of a cell is approximately ten days. As a student comes to realize that all matter is amenable to the

power of thought, he will understand how complete regeneration of the body may be realized through controlling its cells by the force of mind. "All things are possible to him that believeth."

Evolution is truly God's handwriting on the wall of time, where both past and future development of man are engraved by the Celestial Hierarchies and he who learns the secret wisdom may read.

Madame Blavatsky has compared the embryo evolving in its prenatal sphere, the individual in his family, the family in the state; the state in mankind to the earth in our system, the system in its central universe, the universe in the cosmos, and the cosmos in the One Cause. She concludes with the paraphrase:

*All are but parts of one stupendous whole  
Whose body nature is and Parabrahm the soul.*

#### THE RECAPITULATION DOCTRINE.

The most remarkable of all principles discovered by embryologists is called the Recapitulation Doctrine. In the course of his development, every individual recapitulates his ancestral history. Each generation repeats the structural forms of previous generations in the order in which they successively appeared. However, each form appears a little earlier in each succeeding generation. Only thus can time be provided for the introduction and unfoldment of new and higher characteristics. The development of the embryo is "a condensed and abbreviated repetition of the human race."

By the end of the first month, the embryo has assumed a plantlike appearance; the esophagus, stomach, and intestine look like a long vine. Later there is the recapitulation of the bird stage; still later, the animal; and finally, the Ego fashions its permanent physical form.

In both plant and vegetable kingdoms, useless vestiges of early organs are encountered. An unborn whale has

rudimentary teeth; dwarfed limbs have been discovered in the embryo of certain large snakes; an embryonic frog is limbless and gill-breathing; and a chick of three to five days' development has four slits on the side of its neck. Similarly, a human embryo of from three to five weeks has several gills slits which later become the eustachian tube.

More than one hundred and eighty of these vestigial structures have been discovered in the human body, indicating the way in which its physical form has developed. The pattern for the Recapitulation Doctrine is held in the Memory of Nature, and is reproduced by the Lords of Form in chromatin cells.

#### THE EMBRYO AND ITS REACTIONS TO SPIRITUAL FORCES

Each human body has its origin in a single cell. Although myriads of cells are required to make a body, only those which originate in an ovum can ever become a proper temple for the habitation of an indwelling Spirit. In order that life may become manifest the ovum and sperm cells must unite in such manner that there is a complete fusion between the nuclei of sperm and cell.

The initial impulse of life force, released upon the Earth by the Hierarchy of Aries, is set into operation here, together with the forces of Taurus which gave the first impress of form. The ensouling of form by the incoming Spirit was instituted by Gemini. These three stellar Hierarchies gave the initial archetypal pattern for human manifestation. As the three former Hierarchies have passed into higher spheres of work, the work itself has been taken over by other Administrators. Leo now governs the life impulses, Scorpio the form, and Virgo the Ego which is to become indwelling.

As the cleavage proceeds by which the original egg-cell is divided into a many-celled embryo, the cells are arranged into a single-layer spherical mass called *blastula*. In the egg a chief axis is usually recognized; the ends of

this axis are termed the poles of the egg and are designated as vegetal and animal poles. In practically every egg there is a trace of yolk. The tendency of the yolk is to accumulate toward the vegetal pole while the nucleus veers toward the animal pole.

Throughout nature the interweaving of cosmic forces projected by the masculine and feminine poles not only produces life but results in its continuously progressive manifestation in form. The vegetal pole represents the feminine principle; the animal, the masculine. The feminine operates through the yolk; the masculine, through the nucleus. The mystic marriage of the two polarities of spirit is evidenced many times throughout the embryological development.

In the fusion of sperm and egg after the process of karyokinesis, the dance of the chromosomes previously described takes place with this difference: the two cells, instead of separating, remain together and repeatedly divide. This division continues until there is a group of active cells termed a *morula*. This is the beginning of the embryo. Embryonic cells grow and divide with such rapidity that within a period of approximately forty days the embryo is the size of a grain of corn and the infinitesimal baby already possesses a miniature head and back. The developing child is termed an *embryo* until the end of the second month; after that time it is known as a *foetus*.

The form-building of the animal and human kingdoms is under the supervision of Scorpio, the Lords of Form. Mineral and plant life work is accomplished by Angels, the Hosts of Aquarius. The Lords of Scorpio work only with those forms sufficiently evolved to possess a desire body.

Evolution is a great celestial ladder extending from Earth to Heaven, leading from a crystal to God. Every life-form, under guidance of great superphysical Beings, is gradually climbing this ladder, round by round and



life by life. "A thousand years is with the Lord as a day."

Microscopic research indicates no permanence of any particular mode of reproduction. Any single organism goes through many metamorphoses in its evolutionary cycle. In some of the earlier cycles, reproduction is produced by building; later, by cooperation of two beings of opposite sex.

In the *Kabbala* Moses states that it requires both Earth and Water to make a man. The infinitesimal nucleus of man is composed of the same elements as is the stone. We may say, therefore, that during the first four weeks of the development the embryo resembles a stone (mineral); in the second month it becomes plant-like, composed of thin layers enclosing a liquid; in the third month it begins the formation of certain protuberances that are to become organs, and by which it becomes animal-like; and in the fourth month it enters definitely upon the human stage of its development.

Alchemically, these four "kingdoms" equate with the four astrological elements; for in each kingdom of life, one principle predominates over the others. The mineral kingdom is the element *Earth* (form); plant kingdom, *Water* (vital force); animal kingdom, *Fire* (feeling and desire); finally, Man is *Air* (mind), for in him mind is the ruling principle. Man alone is a Son of Air and close kin to the Celestial Hierarchies, a condition reflected zodiacally in the "Sign of the Son of Man," Aquarius, and in the two mercurial signs also represented by human figures, Gemini and Virgo.

As the four kingdoms of evolutionary life are recapitulated in the embryo's first four months, so, too, are the chief distinguishing characteristics of the Four Great Races. Reproduction of the First Race (Polarian) was by fission; the Second Race (Hyperborean) was hermaphrodite; the Third Race (Lemurian), oviparous; the Fourth Race (Atlantean) propagated itself by cooperation of male and female.

## THE OVA AND SPERMATAZOA

### *The Two Organisms Through Which Fire and Water Principles Operate*

The *pelvis* is formed of the sacrum and the two innominate (nameless) bones. This pelvic casket in the female contains the sacred creative organs: ovaries, uterus, and the Fallopian tubes. The ovum travels from the ovaries to the Fallopian tubes and there meets and fuses with the male seed. The pelvis, containing the Holy Grail Cup of the body's generative system, is a reflex of the Grail Cup formed within the bones of the skull and composed of the pineal and pituitary glands together with the Pons Varoli or "Tree of Life."

The most important of the feminine creative organs are the small groups of cells which produce the egg cells. These are two in number, called the *ovaries*. The masculine creative organs which produce the sperm, called *testes*, are also two in number. In the male these organs are extended and lie close together in the scrotum. In the female they lie deep within the body near the hip bones, at the back of the waist line, and are several inches apart. It is largely due to the difference in position of the creative organs that the demarcation of sex may be noted in prenatal growth. During early months of development the male organs are also internal, but later take their place externally.

Each sex carries the organs of its opposite polarity in miniature as a reminder of long past evolutionary cycles when all living beings were hermaphrodite (Hermes-Aphrodite), possessing both sexual attributes equally developed. At a certain stage of the antenatal cycle, under the workings of the Virgo-Scorpio Hierarchies, certain hormones are produced which cause the latency of one sex and growth of the other. This is done in accordance with records of the Cosmic Scroll and to meet karmic requirements of the Ego.

Spermatozoa are produced in the testes of the male. The female produces numberless ova of which only one or two are available normally for impregnation. This work of the creative organs is stimulated by lunar influences, beginning when the Moon enters the sign of conception and attaining its fruition as it reaches the opposition sign.

Each spermatozoon consists of a single minute cell; however, its shape is so specialized that its parts are referred to as head, body, and tail. This male cell possesses remarkable powers of individual movement. It is the only cell of the entire human body comparable to the active living uni-cellular organisms of lower life grades. By means of its elongated tail the spermatozoon swims in liquid as does a fish in water.

An ovum, on the contrary, gives no sign of life until it is awakened by fusion with the masculine sperm. Once the ovum, with its nucleus and protoplasm, is surrounded by spermatozoa, one of the latter penetrates the protoplasm of the egg and unites with the nucleus of the egg cell. In this fusion of male and female life essences Fire and Water unite. The miracle of miracles occurs. The forces of heaven and earth are blended. An immortal Spirit descends to resume physical embodiment.

#### EMBRYOLOGICAL DEVELOPMENT AND THE STARS

Nowhere in all human development is there a more graphic representation of the operations of Cosmic Wisdom than in the outworking of archetypal patterns during the prenatal period. In a few weeks are developed structures which took the race millions of years to evolve. During the first month of embryological development the Moon reflects a tenuous outline of the etheric body-pattern which is to serve as a model for the plastic embryo-in-the-making.

At the end of the second week the *ammion allantois* and rudiments of the embryo appear. At this time the Moon has reached a place opposite that occupied by the Sun at conception and its influences become particularly

potent. The embryo now measures about one-twelfth of an inch in length. The stem of the allantois becomes the navel string.

It is interesting to note the development of the brain in connection with the vertebral column, the cerebrum being the last organ to develop. This is readily recognizable as being in perfect line and sequence with evolutionary progress, for the higher faculties are of the most recent acquisition. The cerebrum belongs to the work of the present or Fifth Creative Day. The elongated embryonic structure, with a groove-like channel that later becomes the spine, bends inward at the upper terminal initiating formation of brain and spinal marrow.

The influence of the Moon is especially marked in the building of vertebra structure, and later is equally important in relation to its normal functioning in the human body.

In the second month Mars plays additional influences upon the developing embryo. The head now shows pronounced growth; also the limbs. Sex glands appear by the end of the sixth week. In the beginning these organs show no structural difference, but microscopic examination reveals definite demarcations. Female organs are larger and more rounded than those of the male. By the end of the second month the embryo has developed definitely as male or female.

In the third month the forces of Mercury become active. Work during this period is concerned primarily with that most intricate of all body mechanisms, the nervous system. Here is to be found the principal seat of past development and future evolution. The longitudinal line or segment faintly outlined in the first month now expands into three minute vesicles; the first and third of these sacs again divide into five. The walls of these sacs will develop later into the brain, and the sacs will form the ventricles of the brain. The remainder of this segment will form the spinal cord, which in initiatory work is

to become the alchemical laboratory of the body through which the forces of Mercury and its higher octave Neptune will turn base metals into gold, as the Ego gains celestial wisdom for building that temple not made with hands, but which is eternal in the heavens.

Development during the fourth month is under the Sun. Very wonderful becomes the work of the heart and its linking with the microscopical etheric body. Under the impulses of the Sun the developing organism shows its first signs of life.

The original cell from which the human body develops is the radiant nucleus emanated by the Lords of Flame (Hierarchy of Leo), and it is this shining receptacle of light which becomes the heart center in the body temple—that center which is the first to live and the last to be extinguished when the physical body has served its purpose. The beginning of the heart is a single tubelike structure. It grows so rapidly that it is forced to bend and fold, assuming almost an S shape. This rapidly changes until a four-chambered organ develops. When the embryo is approximately two inches long, the heart, with its connecting vessels, is completely and perfectly formed.

During the fourth month the spinal cord is as long as the vertebral column, but during succeeding months the column grows more rapidly than the cord. At birth the cord reaches only to the third lumbar vertebra; from that vertebra to the end of the column the cord is but an extended terminal filament.

During the fifth month, under the forces of Jupiter, the work is concerned principally with the intricacies of the circulatory system. Many interesting variations occur in the embryological development of the structures of both the heart and blood vessels, showing how great are the changes which have been made in man's body since he evolved from a water-breathing into an air-breathing creature. Widely differing vestiges of valvular heart construction have been discovered, even those belonging to animals

no higher than the frog. This is pertinent to occult embryology as it proves the Ego's alertness (or lack of it) in learning its lessons of body-building. Here are found pioneers and laggards as in all other grades of evolving life.

The earlier part of the sixth month, under Venus, shows formation of well-developed skin and hair; later, the beginnings of eyebrows, eye lashes and the first signs of fatty substances under the skin.

In the seventh month, under the concreting forces of Saturn, the skull takes form and the bones assume definite shape. There are now beginning definite manifestations of karmic influences on bodily development.

The bony structure tends to bind the Ego to the materialistic vibrations of Earth, so it sometimes happens that a highly advanced Ego will evade this dense Earth bond by what is termed a "premature birth" and come into physical incarnation as a seven-month child.

One who is born under this astral signature responds more readily to inner-plane vibrations than is normal so is generally considered a "sensitive."

The work of the sixth month under Venus is definitely furthered in the eighth month under Uranus. In addition, the developing physical organism is brought into closer relationship with its etheric pattern and the nervous system is set to rhythms of the etheric, so that spiritual development may at some future time become more easily accessible under Uranian impacts.

The ninth and birth month responds to the vibratory rhythms of Neptune, planet of divinity, under whose influence the Spirit is ushered into Earth existence.

The work begun under Mercury in the third month is completed in the ninth month. At birth all cells of the nervous system are present. The new-born child will develop no new brain cells, but certain structural changes will take place in nerves which control the motor mechanism.

With the ninth month there occurs a full interplay of all planetary forces necessary to the human organism. The living, breathing child is now born into a new phase of evolutionary experiences upon the objective Earth plane.

Bronchial clefts, a remnant of specific stages of fish life, develop in the embryo about the end of the third week. Since the human being has evolved lungs as a means of breathing he has no further need for these gill-clefts and so they do not break through. By the end of the sixth week they have entirely disappeared so far as outer appearance is concerned. The manner in which these gills develop into the intricacies of the human throat is one of the marvels of embryological and anatomical study. One of the most wonderful things in connection with the whole divine physiological scheme is the fact that although for nine months the embryo has been growing in liquid and is, therefore, unable to breathe, at the moment of birth it begins to use its lungs, and their use never ceases until the last breath when physical life is ended.

At the first cry the karmic signature is set upon the Earth-life just beginning. The Ego receives its starry baptism which conditions it for its incarnate pilgrimage. A seer can observe this process in the etheric structure of the organism, where it can be seen that the first breath carries the karmic and planetary record by way of the lungs to the seed atom in the third ventricle of the heart. Here it is inscribed indelibly as part of the Ego's cosmic record of the ages.

Mme. Blavatsky, in *The Secret Doctrine*, tabulates the development of the embryo as a "condensed and abbreviated repetition of the evolution of the race."

1. *Fission* (a) as seen in the division of the homogeneous speck of protoplasm into two parts as the amoeba. (b) Division of the nucleated cell in which the cell-nucleus splits into two sub-nuclei which either develop within the original cell or burst it and multiply outside as independent entities. First Root Race.

2. *Budding* (a) A small portion of the parent structure swells out at the surface and parts company with the original body, growing to the size of the original organism as in the sea-anemone, for instance. Second Root Race.

3. *Spores* (a) Single cell thrown off by parent organism which develops into a multicellular organism reproducing features of the latter; e.g., bacteria and mosses.

4. Intermediate hermaphroditism. Male and female organs inhering in the same individual; majority of plants, worms, and snails. Second and Early Third Root Races.

5. True sexual union. Late Third Root Race.

The embryonic face in its different formations and growth offers an interesting verification of the above tabulation. In the early part of the second month's foetal development, the contour of the face is fishlike; later it assumes a more animal-like appearance; at the beginning of the third month the face decidedly suggests a Third Root Race recapitulation.

To summarize briefly: through the male organs, known as spermaries, operates the masculine or Fire Principle of God, to produce minute cells, the spermatozoa. Through the female organs, the ovaries, operates the feminine or Water Principle of God to produce ova or eggs. The blending of these two forces—Fire moving upon the Waters to create—produces fertilization, a secret process, the supreme miracle of heaven and earth.

When the radiant Fire-force within the seminal fluid enters the mother's body it is white; by the expiration of the first seven-day period it has transformed to blue; at the end of the second seven-day interval it is yellow; at the conclusion of the third seven-day period it is red. The twenty-one days of this transmutation process is a time of great opportunity and responsibility for both the expectant mother and the incoming Ego, and it is an interval of which material science admits it knows nothing.

Science informs us that though a human ovum is only about 1/125 of an inch in diameter, it has a volume almost



thirty-five thousand times that of the sperm. The feminine functions are molding and building; hence, a greater power is required than for the masculine. We also learn that every chromosome of maternal origin in an ordinary cell has an equivalent mate derived from the male parent. The organism producing the union of the two germ cells is potentially dual in nature. This is one of the most striking facts in embryology.

The Father-Mother Principle of God manifests in all creation; it operates in the development of a cell as in the formation of a solar system. The nucleus of every cell is a blending of Fire and Water. This union produces a new being—the Trinity in Union.

The twenty-four chromosomes are centers of attraction for the positive and negative aspects of the Twelve Zodiacal Hierarchies who aid the evolution of man and planet. Science is even now speculating as to the possibility of changes in both appearance and form by changes in the number of chromosomes.

Life and its processes are the sublime mystery of the ages! It has been so ever since that long-past day when God breathed into man's nostrils the breath of life and he became a living soul (Genesis 11:7).

Man has lost all memory of the workings of this process. The reason for this loss is given by Paul in Ephesians 4:18: "Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart."

Paul also points the way by which man may regain close, conscious touch with divine life processes and come again into companionship with celestial Beings who are in constant, loving attendance upon Egos living in the physical realm, those about to incarnate and those who are passing beyond this veil of dust and tears. He writes in Colossians III:1-4:

"If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of

God. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with Him in glory.”

## ADDENDUM

### CELL STRUCTURE

*Nucleus*—Central portion of cell.

*Cytosome*—Peripheral cell-body.

*Cytoplasm*—The protoplasm of the cell exclusive of the nucleus (the substance of cytosome).

*Centrosome*—A minute protoplasmic body found in the cytoplasm, less often in the nucleus, of any animal and some plant cells, which takes an important part in mitosis. (At one side of nucleus is small ground, surrounded by denser area of cytoplasm.)

*Linin*—The substance of the achromatic fibrous network of a cell nucleus. (Threads of faintly staining material traverse it in every direction and form a net-work.)

*Chromatin*—A protoplasmic substance in the nucleus of cells, which stains deeply with basic stains. Chemically, it consists largely of proteid compounds of nucleic acid. (Densely stained strands of this net-work in irregular granules or patches.)

*Chromosomes*—One of the small bodies, ordinarily definite in number in the cells of a given species, into which the chromatin of a cell nucleus resolves itself previous to mitosis. (The coils in nucleus break up into segments in preparation for division. These segments are chromosomes.)

*Protoplasm*—Masculine ; *Chromatin*—Feminine.

*Simple or direct cell divisions*—when nucleus constricts in the middle and the two halves separate into two bodies.

*Mitosis or indirect cell divisions*—involves profound changes or rearrangement of the nuclear contents. The ordinary process by which the cells of plants and animals multiply, involving typically, in successive steps, the segregation and equal division of the chromosomes, formation of daughter nuclei at the poles of a spindle of radiating fibers, and growth of a new cell wall through the center of the spindle.

*Plasmosome*—The true nucleolus of a cell as distinguished from a *karyosome*. Small spheroidal body, differing in its staining reactions from chromatin.

## Chapter V

### ***Ye Are the Temple of the Living God***

*Know ye not that ye are the Temple of the living God?—St. Paul.*

The human body and the way of its regeneration is the theme of every book in both the Old and New Testaments. The Tabernacle in the Wilderness, the Temples of Solomon and Zerubbabel, the Holy City of Ezekiel, and of the Seer of Patmos, each has its parallel in the human organism. Christ Jesus Himself said, "Destroy this temple and in three days I will raise it up again," and the Disciples knew that He was referring to the body-temple.

The plan, structure, measurements and materials of the Tabernacle, which is the prototype for both the City and Temple of Jerusalem, all have significance in relation to the body and inner nature of man. So, too, do the objects contained within it. The Ark typifies the divine Spirit that dwells within the temple; the golden pot of Manna (the purified heart), with its white wafers made of honey, symbolizes the sacred life force in man which, when conserved and transmuted, elevates him to the status of the superman. Aaron's Rod that budded represents the life force lifted up through the spinal cord to the head and the unfolding therein of spiritual centers of perception. The Tables of the Law symbolize the positive and negative forces centered in the seed atom of the bodies of man. The Seven-branched Candlestick represents the seven principles in man which relate him to the seven planes of Being. The twelve loaves of Shrewbread have reference to the bread of life produced under the action of the twelve zodiacal signs, each of which governs that part of the body of man corresponding to their activity in the Solar Man. They also represent, anatomically, the twelve cranial nerves through the sensitization of which man awakens to the

great work of Transmutation. The Altar of Burnt Offering symbolizes the sacrifice of fleshly desires; the Laver of Consecration, the processes of purification which result in the spiritualization of the mind and its consequent union with Spirit.

Paul declared, "Ye are the temple of the living God," and it is the dictum of Paracelsus that "there is only one anatomy worth studying and this is the kind in which occult science can assist." Writing in a similar vein, Henry Drummond (in the Lowell lectures) says:

"Those who know the Cathedral of St. Mark's will remember how this noblest of the stones of Venice owes its greatness to the patient hands of centuries of workers, how every quarter of the globe has been spoiled of its treasures to dignify this single shrine. But he who ponders over the more ancient Temple of the Human Body will find imagination fails him as he tries to think from what remote and mingled sources, from what lands, seas, climates, atmospheres, its various parts have been called together and by what innumerable contributory creatures, swimming, creeping, flying, climbing, each of its several members was wrought and perfected.

"What ancient chisel first sculptured the rounded columns of the limbs? What dead hands built the cupola of the brain and from what older ruins were the scattered pieces of its mosaic work brought?

"Who fixed the windows in its upper walls? What winds and weathers wrought strength into its buttresses? What ocean beds and forest glades worked up its colorings? What love and terror and night called forth the music? And what life and death and pain and struggle put all together in the noiseless workshop of the past?"

The esotericist knows that the human organism in its entirety is a reflection of spirit. The greatest cathedral ever conceived by man falls far short of the symmetrical perfection demonstrated in the construction of that most wonderful of all temples, the temple of the human body.

## THE BONES

Paracelsus states: "Every body consists of three ingredients, sulphur, mercury, and salt. These three compounds are called a body. If you look at a man and see only the bones, you see as a clown sees, but if you can separate his sulphur, his mercury, and his salt, then you see clearly what a bone is. The mere looking at externals is a matter for clowns, but the intuition of internals is a secret which belongs to the physician."

It is not enough merely to understand, even esoterically, the *present* condition of the human body. We must know something of its past as well as something of its structure as it existed embryonically in earlier evolutionary Periods, or *Days* of the first chapter of Genesis. The following is a brief recapitulation of the Western Wisdom Teachings on this point.

In the First Great Creative Day (Polarian) that substance which formed the embryonic body was entirely spiritual. In the Second Day (Hyperborean) it was etheric and luminous, appearing somewhat like the Sun shining through a mist. In the Third Day (Lemurian) it became predominantly liquid. Only in the Fourth Day (Atlantean) did it become sufficiently material to assume its present physical likeness.

In the early spiritual stages of evolution, the work of body building was under the guidance of the Leo Hierarchy (Lords of Flame). Man then lived in Paradise. Later, as the skeleton began to form under the crystallizing influences of the Moon and Earth, the work came under the Scorpio Hierarchy (Lords of Form) and the Capricorn Hierarchy (Archangels) with the Saturnian forces which tend toward percipitation and restriction. Thus, in a sense, we may say that the bones constitute a barrier or an opaque veil that shuts the Ego away from the higher realms. The intricate bony structure marks the peak of our physical evolution thus far. But it belongs

only to the Earth plane. Future evolutionary work will dissolve excessive crystallization in the bony structure and it will become again etherealized, while remaining the support of the whole form.

Life means sensitization. The less awakened the life, the less sensitive it is. The oyster within its protective shell (skeleton) is almost impervious to sensation. Man, the highest form of life, has built the nervous system on the outside and the bony structure within. Thus he is more easily hurt than the oyster, but through these hurts he is developing a still more highly sensitized nervous system which will open the way for further spiritual attainment.

Before death can be overcome by man he must gain complete control of the bony skeleton. (This is the profoundest meaning of the Earth Initiation.) "*Not a bone of his body was broken*" was spoken of the Christ, with reference to the beginning of the process of spiritualizing the skeleton.

With the formation of bones, death (that is, loss of contact with the inner worlds) came to man. As he learns to assume control of the bony structure by infusing into it the power of spirit he will gain mastery over death and know the life immortal.

The bony structure marks the development of a species. In its early stages man's body bore but little resemblance to its present form. What is now bone was then cartilage. The hardened frame appeared in the late Atlantean Period. The appearance of the backbone or vertebral structure marks a major step in the progressive development of the body. Wherever there is a backbone there is also the beginning of the third optic nerve, and as the vertebral structure heralds the appearance of man, so the emergence of the optic nerve signals the appearance of superman. As the axis of the body changed in the course of evolution from the horizontal to the perpendicular, it became necessary to effect a change in every bone and muscle of the body.

The pelvic girdle is a broad shallow basin which supports the viscera. The keystone of the girdle is the sacrum. It supports the backbone and locks the arch behind. The sacrum at birth varies from the fourth to the seventh vertebrae; these unite into one bone. Above the sacrum is the vertebral column composed of seven neck vertebrae which are cervical, twelve thoracic, and five lumbar, making twenty-four in all. At birth it is usual to find twelve pairs of ribs, but some infants have eleven while others have thirteen. Seven pairs of ribs join the breast bone or sternum, although sometimes there are six or eight, the first pair being mere rudiments.

No architect has ever duplicated the spine in a column so slender, well adjusted and well-balanced. Its graceful paired curves give elasticity and grace to the body and save the brain from jar and shock. The backbone ends in five rounded bones about the size of peas, called the coccyx or tail bones.

In the case of the bones of the skull, the brain can grow as long as the three big sutures of the skull remain open. These close earlier in animals than in man. Premature closing results in idiocy in the human being. The back suture closes first while the front brain continues to grow. A boat-shaped head results from the premature closing of the parietal suture. The frontal bone begins as two. Shortly after birth the suture disappears and the two become one.

Bone growth is one of the miracles of body-building. The infant skeleton is composed of cartilage sufficiently firm for limbs to hold their shape, but elastic and flexible so that falls are not necessarily dangerous. These cartilages divide, lengthen, and thicken. Soon after birth spots of true bony material begin to appear. This marvellous transformation is carried on by certain living cells whose work is that of architects and masons to the bony structure. They deposit the material atom by atom inside the flexible cartilage and gradually change the soft skeleton of infancy



into the hard, bony framework which is to become the support of the adult body. Shortly after birth two or three million of these minute bonebuilders begin their activities inside the ends of the larger bones.

When bones are broken these tiny masons begin at once to construct a bridge between the two separated parts. Under microscopic examination this work is fascinating to behold.

Dr. Policard, an investigator in the subject, in a report to the French Academy stated that for purposes of study he used cells from a bone fracture which he grew in culture solutions of chemicals as nearly like those of the physical body as possible. During the first part of the healing process the cells grew in one way and in the later stage of repair in another way, their nature changing completely as their work neared completion. Fractured bones do not merely adhere together. The repair of bone injury introduces a vast army of infinitesimal living cells, or workmen. Immediately after injury, cells from the inner or soft, spongy part of the bone migrate into the break and build themselves into a living bridge across the gap. These minute repair men gradually transform their surroundings into the hard compound of lime of which true bone consists.

As we have noted from time to time all temples of spiritual worship have three divisions: An Inner and Outer Court, and a Holy of Holies. We find a similar three-fold division in the bony formations of the human body temple.

Observe first the box-shaped area consisting of hip bones, sacrum, and pelvis. This contains the organs of generation and corresponds to the Outer Court of the temple.

A second boxlike structure is formed by the ribs on either side of the backbone and the diaphragm. Here is contained the heart and lungs, organs of life and vitality. This segment constitutes the Inner Court or Holy Place in Solomon's Temple.

The third box, or casket is formed of the bones of the skull which enclose and protect the brain and the spiritual organs of perception known as the Pineal and Pituitary Glands, a veritable Holy of Holies.

Through these three "courts" or enclosures, the great fire centers of the universe pour their influences. Aries, the initial fire force, plays through the head. Leo, the love light, centers in the heart. Sagittarius, the life fire, burns in the generative area. These three centers and their corresponding spiritual development equate with the esoteric Masonic work of the Blue Lodge degrees, Apprentice, Fellowcraft, and Master, the keynote of which is expressed in the adjuration, "Offer yourselves a living sacrifice upon the altar of life."

## THE SKIN

"Unto Adam and his wife did the Lord God make coats of skin and clothed them." (Genesis 3:2). Physiology declares that "There is a skin without and a skin within, a covering skin and a lining skin: but the skin within is the skin without doubled inward, and carried completely throughout."

The embryonic dense body cell consists of three layers: ectoderm (outside), mesoderm (middle) and entoderm (inside). Of these three primary cell substances the entire physical body is composed.

The outer skin layer, the ectoderm, is allied to the masculine or Father principle and correlates with the work of the First Creative Day (Saturn Period). From the ectoderm is formed a highly differentiated epithelial tissue which composes the lining of all sense organs and all glands opening into the mouth and nasal passages.

The inner skin layer, the entoderm, is allied to the feminine or the Mother principle and correlates to the Second Creative Day (Sun Period). It forms the lining of the alimentary canal from the back of the mouth to the

end of the large intestine; also of the glands which open into this part of the tube.

The middle layer or mesoderm, made up of both the ectoderm and entoderm, is allied to the third or offspring principle. It correlates to the Third Creative Day (Moon Period) and the building of the connective body tissues.

The skin covers the external body and forms the lining for all internal cavities. Its renewal is effected by processes from within the body. The outer layer, the epidermis or cuticle, is thickest in the palms of the hands and the soles of the feet. Between the epidermis and the derma, or *cutis vera* (true skin), the inner layer, are little papillae containing nerves and blood vessels. The epidermis has three parts: the outer, the soft, moist middle cells, and the inner cells which contain the skin pigmentation.

The derma is thicker and tougher than the epidermis. It is semitransparent. The derma varies in thickness from one-fiftieth to about one-sixtieth of an inch, being thickest in the small of the back. It contains the sweat and oil glands, fat cells, nerves and absorbent vessels and blood vessels. Sweat glands are most numerous in forehead, palms of hands, and soles of the feet. They number some 2,500,000. United in length they would stretch out about two and one-half miles.

The elementary sensations of the skin are touch, warmth, cold, and pain. The sense of touch is most delicate at the tips of the fingers and tip of the tongue and least sensitive at thighs and buttocks.

Maintaining proper temperature rests with sweat glands of the skin and its blood vessels. The feeling of hot or cold is not due to a drop in temperature of the body, but to the tiny organs in the skin that feel hot and cold. Whenever there is less warm blood in them they send a "cold" report to the brain. This report is skin temperature only. The brain receives few other temperature reports except from the lining of the mouth and digestive tract (skin also). When the body is making too little heat, the

blood vessels in the skin contract until their tubes are very small and let only a little blood through the skin. This checks the heat outlet and keeps it within the body.

Dr. Rudolf Steiner, Rosicrucian Initiate, writes: "The soul of the light is stopped by the human skin," and already there is some evidence to show why and how the skin is sensitive to light. The skin is evolving an optic nerve. The following quotation is from *Eyeless Sight* by Jules Romains: "There is a rapid skin evolution. A new group of microscopic organs are developing in the epidermis, called *ocelli*. Each ocellus is constituted of (1) a nerve ending; (2) a coarse oval cell of granular protoplasm clearer than the protoplasm of the neighboring cells and equipped with a voluminous nucleus of remarkable refractive powers, and is called the sensory cell; (3) a nerve fibre linking it with the system of ocelli, termed the optic body. When the luminous rays have crossed the upper layers or the epidermis, whose transparence is sufficient for this, they undergo three successive refractions and form on the ocellary retina a more or less crude image."

Consequent upon this discovery, the author relates how he taught blind people to see through the skin, which is more sensitive over some areas of the body than others due to the larger number of ocelli in such areas. The forehead, the chest, and the palms of the hands are among the sensitive areas enumerated. Dr. Romains offers evidence to show that the ocelli are true embryonic eyes, already sufficiently well organized to serve as organs of vision if properly educated. Here again we have a hint of what the future holds in store for the body of the human race.

Apropos of this we may say that previous to material existence, humanity was a "living soul clothed in raiment of light." It was when man entered Earth conditions that he was given the name Adam, which means "red earth," and the words were spoken to him, "Dust thou art, unto dust thou shalt return." The dust body is of course the

physical body acquired through evolution on the Earth plane. It received an erratic impulse from the "fallen" angels, the Luciferian Hierarchy who were stragglers from the Angelic Life wave, half-way between man and the Angels in development. The primordial body of light was moulded along harmonious lines with the aid of the Angels and under the supervision of the Lords of Form; the Lucifers introduced a new element, self-will, which caused a deviation from the original divine pattern. Form always implies limitation, but not in the sense of actual suffering such as resulted from the Luciferian error. Part of the great sacrificial act of the Christ was His voluntary submission to the limitation of a human body, as prepared for Him by Jesus of Nazareth.

Note that Scorpio governs both higher and lower aspects of man. The scorpion carries the Luciferic impress; the eagle, symbolic of the higher self, represents the winged golden garment of the New Adam, whose prototype is the Christ. Such also is the golden eagle, the simurgh of Persian mythology.

With the disappearance of the "coats of skin," the memory of fallen man and the lower aspects of Scorpio will pass. "For the old heaven and earth are passed away, and there shall be no more sea." The Bible begins with the story of man taking on coats of skin. It closes with a picture of the new heaven and new earth wherein he will again assume a body of light.

The functions of the skin as at present constituted will then be translated into spiritual terms. The skin now possesses both a positive and a negative function: namely, absorption and excretion. These reflect the activities of the polarities of the human Spirit, positive and negative, masculine and feminine. Spiritual absorption and excretion relate to the spiritual activities of Truth and Love.

There are three ways of disposing of surplus body heat: first, by sending the blood rapidly to the skin; second, by cold air drawn into the lungs; third, by sweat glands.

A person perspiring freely could remain for considerable time in a hot oven—hot enough to cook meat. Ordinarily the body produces more heat than it needs; by means of perspiration alone it is able to rid itself of three times as much heat as it requires. If it were not for the sweat glands a person could not work during hot weather. A certain amount of respiration also goes on through the skin, absorbing oxygen and giving off carbonic gas. The lungs also help to dispose of heat.

The protective functions of the skin, as in disposing of heat, is a type of spiritual function by which the Ego knows intuitively what is right and best and so is forever enveloped in God's protecting Love.

The temperature of the body falls about one degree during sleep. The skin protects, excretes, purifies, absorbs, and provides the principal seat of external sensation. It also regulates the temperature of the body, which is normally 98.6 degrees Fahrenheit while the skin temperature is 95 degrees Fahrenheit. If the temperature of the body itself gets above 107 degrees even for a short time, death nearly always takes place. Even 105 degrees is dangerous.

Skin has likewise the property of absorbing various substances applied to it. Absorption takes place most readily on parts where the epidermis is thinnest. Thirst is considerably relieved by bathing. Medicines produce effects on the internal system when rubbed into the skin. Children exhausted by disease and unable to eat, or whose stomachs refuse to retain food, have been saved from starvation by rubbing nourishing substances on the surface of the body, by means of which particles are absorbed into the blood.

The *mystic nine*, the number of man that plays such an important role in relation to his physical and spiritual evolution, is present also in the *nine* layers into which the skin may be divided: (1) hairy or outer layer; (2) true skin; (3) layer containing small blood vessels; (4) layer containing sweat glands; (5) fatty tissue; (6) layer con-

taining hair bulbs; (7) layer containing hair shafts; (8) layer containing oily glands; (9) layer containing nerves, seat of touch and sensitiveness.

## THE MUSCLES

In the first chapter of this book, *The Archetype*—, it was noted how the archetype or celestial pattern of the human body was given to man by the Lords of Mind in the First Day of evolution (Saturn Period). Then also the sense organs were evolved germinally, with the assistance of the Lords of Flame (Leo). In the Second Day (Sun Period) the construction of the alimentary canal and glandular system began. In the Third Day (Moon Period) the muscular system had its beginnings; also the skeleton and liver. The Lords of Individuality (Libra) assisted in this work. In the Fourth Day (present Earth Period) the intricate mechanism of the cerebellum (feminine in polarity) was begun. The Lords of Form (Scorpio) and the Angels (Aquarius) helped with this work.

When correlating the evolutionary Days with the Epochs of the Earth Period (Epochs are the subdivisions of a Period), the Third is found to correspond to the Lemurian, the Fourth to the Atlantean, and the Fifth to the present Aryan Epoch. It is in this Fifth Day that the cerebro-spinal nervous system and the cerebrum (upper brain, masculine in polarity) began under the Lords of Form and the Archangels (Scorpio and Capricorn, respectively).

The Powers of Light and Darkness contend for mastery on every plane of manifestation. The vital body is under the control of the angelic kingdom and the desire body is under the Lucifers. Their combat ground is within man. Each Hierarchy endeavors to invade the kingdom of the other. Man lends his assistance to these contenders, one way or the other, by yielding supremacy to his higher or lower nature.

The glands are the particular field of activity of the etheric beings who work through the vital body. However, the desire body has gained a center in the spleen and there forms the white blood corpuscles which are so inimical to health, even fatal if they are allowed to become too numerous. Being a distinct desire body product, the serious ills which they engender proclaim the karmic effect of unleashed desires and emotional excesses in this or in past lives.

The muscular system is the especial evolutionary work of the desire body, having its beginnings, as above noted, in the Third Creative Day (Moon Period) wherein the principal work under the jurisdiction of desire had its origins.

Muscles are, therefore, particularly amenable to the force of desire. The flesh is controlled by Mars. Any excitement or tension in the desire body produces a direct reaction in the muscular system. This is why meditation is important in spiritual work, for by it the mind quiets desires and holds them in control. With the muscles relaxed, the Ego is free to rise from the state of Meditation into that of Contemplation. Max Heindel writes concerning this: "Relaxation does not mean simply a comfortable position; it is possible to have every muscle tense with expectation and that of itself frustrates the object, for in that condition the desire body is gripping the muscles. It cannot do otherwise till we calm the mind."

There are two kinds of muscles: the voluntary, which are under the conscious control of the will; the involuntary, which are not under direct conscious control. The voluntary system bears the evolutionary insignia of a superior order, its muscles being striped both lengthwise and crosswise, whereas the involuntary muscles are striped crosswise only.

One organ only belonging to the involuntary system possesses the cross stripes of the voluntary system. It is the heart, the most important muscle in the body, and is



destined for the highest development. It has already been taken over by the Spirit from the control of desire and has become the seat of angelic influences which flow in through the etheric body. This means that when wholly freed from the domination of desire, it will be a center of individualized and controllable life-force and therefore a voluntary muscle.

A physiological study of the muscular system challenges the intelligence by its intricacy of structure. There are three hundred and ten muscles on each side of the body. Testut, the famous French anatomist, required nine hundred pages to describe them. One-fourth of all muscles are in the neck and face. Facial muscles show progressive variation and are among the most recent acquisitions of the muscular structure. The facial muscles in animals are more simple. We look for intelligence in their eyes instead of the face. Skin muscles of animals are more active than those of man, for, having served their purpose in human evolution, they tend to disappear. As the skin is evolving eyes through sensitiveness to light, so will the muscles of the body become amenable to the impulses of beauty flowing in from spirit. This is foreshown in the arts of the dance and in histrionics, for the best dancers and actors express intelligence in every muscle of their bodies.

The tremendous evolution ahead for the desire body will have its natural reaction upon the muscular and nervous system, which are the principal avenues for the expression of human desires on the Earth plane. Transmuted desire-stuff is destined to become a luminous translucent spirit-force, already known popularly as *Vril* from the novel by Sir Bulwer-Lytton. By means of this force the new heaven and new earth which John speaks of will literally appear. This will take place coincident with revolutionary changes in the structure of the human body, chief of which will be the change in the position of the heart. It will find its rightful place in the *center* of the body instead of being on the left, or Luciferic side, as at

present. Then the Sacred Heart of Light will be the universal possession of the human race.

## LIVER

The liver is the largest gland in the body and possesses many millions of cells. Each liver cell is an organ containing two hundred and twenty-five million water molecules, two thousand nine hundred million crystalloid molecules, and one hundred and sixty-six million fat molecules and fifty-three million protein molecules.

The liver is one of the most important organs of the human body both from the physiological and the occult viewpoint. It works with and transmutes materials brought by the venous blood from the stomach, pancreas, spleen, and intestines. It manufactures bile, converts glucose into glycogen, and changes other by-products into urea.

The liver is a fascinating study in connection with karmic or past-life causations. Mme. Blavatsky states that "the liver and stomach are correspondences of Karma in the trunk of the body."

Rudolf Steiner writes in his *Egyptian Mysteries*: "The Ego-man is chained to the earth body. Picture man chained to the rock, so is man chained to his physical body, and in the course of evolution something has arisen that saps his immortality. Think of the functions performed by the liver, they have come into existence because the body was chained to the rocks of the earth and here the astral body knows it."

When we understand occultly the functions of the liver we know why the seed atom of the desire body is centered in this organ. As most ills are of karmic origin, it becomes quite understandable why the Grecian myth of Prometheus presented this character as chained to the rock of materiality, his vitals gnawed at daily by vultures causing him the greatest suffering. At night the parts eaten away were replaced so that the punishment was never ending.

Such suffering is humanity's, and this will continue until, through regeneration, man liquidates the wrong-doing of many life cycles past.

In ancient times the priest was physician of both body and soul. His was the office of caring for the ills of individuals and nations. Exorcism, driving out evil forces from bodies, homes and nations, was the principal method of healing. Divination might properly be termed the preventive medicine of the ancients. Both their religious and healing systems were founded upon and regulated by astrological knowledge.

The most common method of divination was by inspection of the entrails of a sacrificial animal, liver divination being held in special esteem. The origin of this practice is lost in remotest antiquity. In Borneo, a pig was generally used; in Burma, a fowl. Some countries used goats or sheep. Such divination was a prominent part of the religious observances of ancient Babylonia and Assyria, and was also used extensively among the early Greeks and Romans. Later this custom was carried over into the rites of the early Hebrews. Ezekiel says, "For the king of Babylon stood at the parting of the way, at the head of the two ways, to use divination: he made his arrows bright, he consulted with images, he looked into the liver."

The liver was regarded as the principal vital organ in the body of the animal and as the seat of mental and emotional activity in man. The heart later was accorded the place of honor as the seat of the soul, earlier accorded to the liver. In Hebrew poetry the word for soul and liver are often used interchangeably. This place of distinction was accorded the liver in Babylonia and Assyria for three thousand years. Thus we may say that the study of anatomy began in Babylon 3000 B. C.

Parts of the liver especially observed in divination were the lobes; gall-bladder (considered as part of the liver); portal vein or gate of the liver; the two appendages to the upper lobe; and markings on the liver lobes, trace-

able to subsidiary gall ducts that gather gall from the liver into the gall bladder, and to the subsidiary vein ducts distributing blood from the large portal vein through the liver.

— The Babylonian priests prepared clay models of sheep's liver for temple neophytes to study. One of these models, now in the British Museum, belonged probably to a temple school of Marduk in Babylon in the time of Hammurabi, 2000 B. C. It shows the parts of the liver to be examined. There have been discovered a great number of omen texts, or liver divination texts, proving how general was this practice. The large appendix was called the finger of the liver. The gall bladder was the bitter part. The depression on the surface was called the crucible and the great portal vein the river. The crucible is, in modern terms, that depression or transverse fissure above the left lobe, and the liver gate is the *porte hepatis*, in which the hepatic duct and portal vein partly lie.

Questions usually dealt with battles, journeys, armies, and the election of public officials. A gall bladder enlarged on the right side was interpreted as indicating the success of the king's army; enlarged on the left side, success of the enemy. If tightly embedded in the gall bladder groove, the king's army in the firm grasp of the enemy; if to the left, enemy prisoner. A prolonged biliary duct indicated a long life; if short, early death. The hepatic duct not enclosed in the gate of the liver meant a position exposed to attack by the enemy; well enclosed, success in battle. If broad the finger-shaped appendix indicated joy. If the small appendix was large it meant that the servant prevailed over the master, son over father, lesser over greater.

The same system was followed by the Etruscans. A sheep's liver in bronze from the third century B. C. was discovered in Italy in 1677 with the same parts marked as in the Babylonian model. Again, Aeschylus, in his *Prometheus*, when recounting the benefits which humanity owed to Prometheus, mentions divination by means of

sacrificial animals; and in the *Electra* of Euripides the gate of the liver is noted.

As anatomical study became independent of religion, the heart superseded the liver as the organ of the Spirit. The heart was considered not only the seat of emotion but of the intellect as well. *Heart* and *soul* are synonyms in the Old Testament. In Greece and Rome, the soothsayers sometimes added heart to liver for divination purposes.

The *Anatomy* of Hippocrates (460-431 B. C.) led to the recognition of the brain's importance. The liver, according to Hippocrates, is the seat of the blood.

Aristotle indicated the heart as the seat of both emotion and intellect. Plato in his *Timaeus* states that man has two souls, immortal in the brain and mortal in the breast. The seat of all lower emotion he places below the diaphragm or in the liver. Further in this same work, Plato says that diseases are chained down like a wild beast between the midriff and the navel; for the gods, knowing emotion would not listen to reason and was liable to be led away by ghosts and phantoms of the day and night, formed the liver to connect with the lower nature and to dwell there. They contrived that it should be compact, smooth, and bright, and both sweet and bitter, in order that in it the energy of the thoughts proceeding from the mind might be received like figures in a mirror and projected as images. Thus, in order that the lower nature might obtain a measure of truth, the gods placed their oracle in the liver.

Cicero and Livy refer to liver divination cults, and in the Pentateuchal codes mention of liver and caul (that which hangs over the liver) occurs frequently, as for example, in Exodus 29:13-22 and Leviticus 3:4-10.

The liver comes rightfully under the control of the expansive and beneficent Jupiter. However, as this organ is an important center of the desire body, in the undeveloped person the liver is largely influenced by Mars and Saturn. Mars works actively in the liver, freeing iron from

the waste materials of the blood and producing gall. This material force centers here in the seed atom of the desire body and if the temper and emotional nature are not under control, results in various serious liver ills. The forces of Mars are violent; those of Saturn are repressive. Martial emotions call for self-control; Saturnian emotions for transmutation. The gall bladder is a direct expression of the desire body. Gallstones are a result of repressed strong emotions such as long-held thoughts of hatred, fear, or revenge.

“Disease,” says Paracelsus, “is of nature, nature alone understands and knows disease and nature also is the medicine of disease. Man contains within himself all knowledge and wisdom required in healing.” He adds further: “The Sun and Moon which I see above me influence me neither for good nor bad, but the Sun, Moon, and planets with which God’s providence has adorned the heavens in me, these have the power to rule and reform me according to their course ordained by God.”

As life becomes spiritualized the liver comes increasingly under Jupiter. As the transmutation of the desire body progresses the liver gradually changes shape and assumes the form of a flower, somewhat like those of the bulbous lily family, its central vortex becoming tinged with colors of a soft Jupiterian blue.

Astrologically, the kidneys come under the airy sign Libra and are governed by Venus, the planet of love. they are excretory organs. This is true both physically and occultly. Together with the liver, the kidneys expel physical waste; if the Ego be sufficiently advanced, they also serve to throw off corresponding substance from the desire body.

Libra is the sign of balance in the zodiac and the kidneys under the sign of Libra are the organs of balance in the body. As body purification continues, the love ray of Venus becomes increasingly manifest in harmonious activity on the part of the adrenals, those minute ductless glands whose role it is to stabilize or balance the entire human organism.

The kidneys and liver are closely interrelated in function. The kidneys are organs of elimination for the physical body, while their astral counterparts perform a corresponding service for the desire body and the mental vehicle. From this fact it is apparent that the purificatory work of the organs of elimination have a much wider range than is ordinarily ascribed to them.

The liver, as we know, secretes inwardly, being the largest of the glands of internal secretion. The kidneys secrete outwardly. Both kidneys and liver are important foci of the activities of the desire body which is the seat of all personal desire. It is because of this fact that these organs react so quickly upon physical health. In the unregenerate they reflect with sensitive precision the inharmony rampant in the emotional field. As mentioned before, suppressed rage, prolonged bitterness, and feelings of revenge are all reflected in the diseases which characterize imperfect functioning of the kidneys and liver, such as gallstones, renal calculi and cirrhosis of the liver. Sometimes the state of mind which causes these painful diseases has sunk below the sufferer's threshold of consciousness, for few indeed know and recognize their own secret failings. To learn to *see* clearly our most deeply hidden faults and to evaluate them is the first work of Initiation, typified in meeting with the "phantom" called the Dweller on the Threshold. It is no objective terror which confronts us on the Threshold, but the personified image of our own lower self which, though it has been consciously sublimated, more or less, frequently continues to act *subconsciously* and so is the cause of much sickness, organic as well as functional.

In regeneration the kidneys and liver become powerful centers of spiritual force; then the body is strengthened, purified, and eventually spiritualized.

#### THE STOMACH AND DIGESTIVE SYSTEM

In the sacramental formula the statement that we partake of the body of Christ is literally true though not,

indeed, by transubstantiation according to some orthodox conceptions, but by the mystic fact that the WORD was made flesh under the likeness of the created universe, so there is no particle of it which is not Christ's "body." Speaking of the spiritual universe (which means the universe as it really exists in spiritual consciousness), Mary Baker Eddy observed, "We tread on forces." The Earth from which, in the ultimate analysis, our sustenance comes, is made up of spiritual forces typified under the image of Bread and Wine. Hence to the mystic every meal is a holy observance attended by prayer, thanksgiving, and praise. Never is it desecrated with flesh food obtained by the slaughter of our younger brothers of the animal kingdom whose evolution is so close to our own. Every meal served and partaken of in love, beauty, harmony, and reverence becomes, in deed and in truth, a Holy Supper.

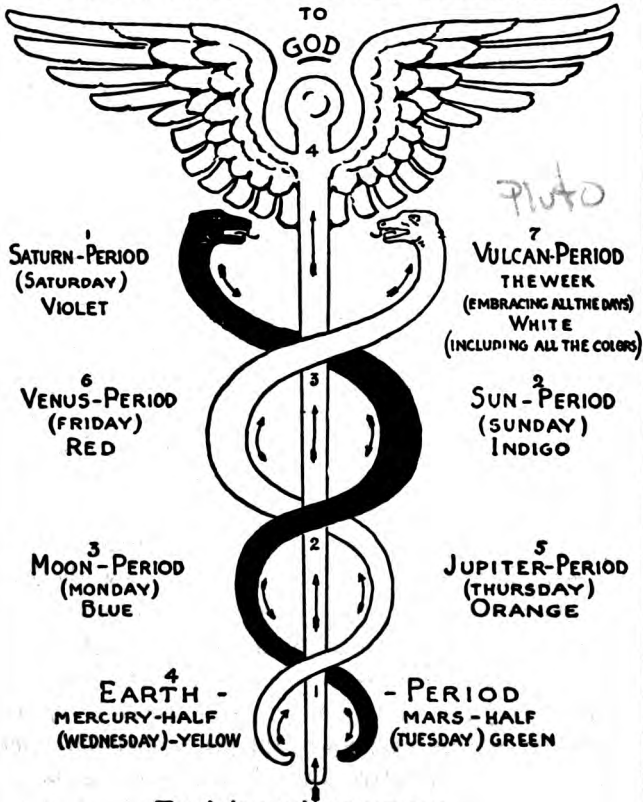
The Masters of the race have acquired the art of body building to an extent which has enabled them to conquer death and illness of every kind. They sustain their body-temples in a state of perfection. They eliminate disease and old age by mastery over the life principle contained in various food elements, regulating its activity in harmony with their own individual keynote. Thus their bodies are perpetuated indefinitely. The widespread interest in food and dietetic problems shows us how humanity as a whole is awakening to this secret wisdom, learning to purify food according to the needs of a more refined and spiritual civilization. The time will come in the far-distant future when, as in the long-distant past, man will again receive his necessary sustenance direct from sunlight and air without any intermediary agent.

The digestive processes were begun in the Second Creative Day (Sun Period) and are thus attuned primarily to the Sun. We see a likeness of this condition in the life cycle of Earth vegetation. When we learn to attune ourselves consciously to what is known as the Spiritual Sun, the Light of the inner world, when our minds and



# THE SEVEN DAYS OF CREATION AND THE FOUR GREAT INITIATIONS

ORDINARY HUMANITY PURSUES THE SPIRAL PATH  
THE INITIATE GOES THE STRAIGHT AND NARROW WAY THAT LEADS



## THE WAY OF INITIATION

THERE WAS NO INITIATION PRIOR TO THE END OF THE  
MARS HALF OF THE EARTH PERIOD. THE LESSER MYST-  
ERIES EMBRACE HUMAN EVOLUTION IN THE MERCURY  
HALF OF THE EARTH-PERIOD

souls turn and live with that Sun as plants do with the material Sun, then we shall know what Paul meant when he said, "Whether ye eat or whether ye drink, do all to the glory of God."

The central germ of every seed is, metaphysically, the breath of God. Every living thing has its seed within by which it is reproduced (Genesis 1:11). The ideal image of the flower in its most minute detail is contained within the seed, which is the focus of the celestial archetypal pattern.

The polarity upon which the universe is built is thus manifest in the seed, with the vital principle representing the positive polarity (masculine), and the soil which provides it with mineral salts, etc., for its growth representing the negative polarity (feminine). This operation in nature has given rise to the mystic formula:

*The hidden Principle of Fire gives life.*

*The formative Principle of Water sustains life.*

Both "Fire" and "Water" in Nature are visible to the eye of the seer: Fire as the life which burns in all vegetation, as Moses saw it in the "burning bush." Water as a sustaining power drawn from the Earth principle, the Living Water of the alchemists, or Living Silver (Aqua Viva and Argentum Vivum, respectively). There are Fire and Water above the Firmament, and Fire and Water below the Firmament also. The polarity above the Firmament is macrocosmic; the polarity below the Firmament is microcosmic. "As it is above, so it is below."

The dual masculine-feminine forces which we have studied in their operations throughout the body are equally evident in digestive processes. Broadly speaking, assimilative processes represent the positive action, eliminative processes the negative. Lymph, representing the desire body, is masculine; the more active an individual is the stronger are its manifestations. Chyle is negative and belongs to the etheric processes. Venusian influences are operative in the chyle and Martian influences through the

lymph, Venus and Mars constituting a polarity.

Through metabolic processes, sacred to the universal Life Principle, spiritual forces transform food substances into animating life essences, which revivify the cells of blood and brain. This mysterious metamorphosis is accomplished only through the workings of spirit and can be investigated adequately only through the organs of spirit, which are metaphysical in nature. Mystics prefer food derived from the vegetable kingdom not only because these are richer in life force than animal food, but because animals are highly individualized and so the use of their flesh as food verges closely on cannibalism. The evolutionary gap between man and animal is sometimes very slight indeed, and we not infrequently meet human beings who have little more soul than the animals they feed upon.

It is rightly said that every part of the body is a symbol of a spiritual faculty. This is the key to a great alchemical secret, whereby base substances are put into a crucible (the mind) over the alchemical fire (ardor and inspiration) until they "go over" into Spirit. The body has been planned for us by great Angels. In a sense, it is a loan from them to us. Only so much of it belongs to us, as individuals, as we make our own through *conscious mental activity*. By learning the primary functions and forms of the body, together with their spiritual correspondence, we acquire knowledge with which to gain control over our bodies, to recreate them "nearer to the heart's desire."

In the digestive processes we observe the workings of Cosmic Wisdom in assimilation whereby Cosmic Good is appropriated by the Ego, and in excretion whereby all that is not of immediate use is eliminated. This activity corresponds to the mental faculty of discrimination.

From the mouth food enters the cone-shaped pharynx which is suspended from the skull. In the natural process of swallowing the esophagus must be opened and the passage to mouth, nose, and wind-pipe closed; otherwise the food goes toward the lungs instead of the stomach. Pro-

cesses of swallowing are so efficient that a "swallowing center" in the brain has been hypothecated.

The stomach has three layers of muscles: lengthwise, oblique, and circular. They vary in thickness in various regions according to the work required of them. Carbohydrates receive different treatment from proteins and fats.

The act of swallowing sends food to the upper or sphincter end of the stomach in one-tenth of a second. Contractions of stomach muscles begin shortly after the food enters the stomach, mixing it with gastric juices. As a result of mixture and contractions chyme is forced toward the pyloric or lower end of the stomach. When the chyme has reached a certain degree of acidity the pylorus opens and the chyme enters the twenty-foot-long small intestine,—one of the greatest marvels of the body, as it is the main center of digestion and absorption. Astrologically it is governed by Virgo and is the physical reflection of the mental quality of discrimination, by which the good is appropriated for use by the Ego.

Into the small intestine are poured juices secreted by millions of minute glands. The lining or coat of the intestine is a marvel of construction, formed by many irregular folds which increase the surface of the mucous coat and slows up the passage of foods to permit thorough digestion. This surface is composed of four million minute projections or villae. Each villus is connected with a lymph vessel, an arteriole and a vein; it is enclosed in a layer of epithelium and contains a muscle. Under the microscope every villus is seen to move about and to pump up and down.

Beyond the small intestine is the large colon which is from five to six feet long and from two and one-half to one-half inch in diameter. Absorptive and digestive processes are concluded here. The cecum (blind) begins as a pouch, the small intestine opening into it on the side. At the blind end is also the opening of the vermiform appendix.

Both small and large intestines have two muscle coats: the inner which is circular and the outer which is longitudinal. They produce two kinds of movements: peristaltic, or waves of constriction which push food onward: rhythmic, which masses the food in certain areas and then breaks up the masses. Science has determined such segregation to occur about every two seconds. Here again we see that perpetual motion and harmonious rhythm underlie the life functions of the body.

### THE SENSE ORGANS

According to the Arabians, the Sun rules the heart, brain, thigh, marrow, right eye, spirit, tongue, mouth, organs of sense (internal and external), hands, feet, legs, and the power of imagination. Mercury rules the spleen, stomach, bladder, womb, and the faculty of common sense. Saturn rules the liver and fleshy part of the stomach. Jupiter rules abdomen and navel. (It is said by ancient authorities that an effigy of the navel was laid up in the Temple of Jupiter-Ammon.) Some also attribute the ribs, breast, bowels, and blood to Jupiter. Mars rules the blood, gall veins, back, motion of sperm veins, kidneys, seed, secrets, breasts, sacrum, backbone, and loins. The Moon, while governing generally the whole body, rules more specifically the cerebellum, lungs, marrow of backbone, menstrual and excretory processes, and power of increase.

Hermes saith: "There are seven holes in the head distributed to the seven planets. Right ear to Saturn, left ear to Jupiter; right nostril to Mars, left to Venus; right eye to Sun, left to Moon; mouth to Mercury."

The ear, like the nose, is partly inside and partly outside the head. The internal ear is deep within the head and within it is the end of the nerve of hearing. The inner ear is filled with liquid which is vibrated by sound. When this liquid vibrates its waves strike the nerve of hearing and the impression of the sound is carried to the brain.

*It is the brain that hears; the ear is only the instrument.*  
Clairaudience manifests through the inner ear alone, under the impact of subtle etheric waves of force as yet unknown to science.

The external ear is like a trumpet, and its office is to collect sound and carry it to the hearing nerve located in the internal ear. The ear is man's oldest and most perfectly developed sense organ. Its beginnings go back to the First great Creative Day of manifestation, the Saturn Period. In the embryo the ear makes an early appearance, and hearing is the last of the senses lost in death. A careful study of the fibres of Corti, of which there are about three thousand in the human ear, each capable of interpreting approximately twenty-five gradations of tone, will suggest the tremendous evolution man is yet to experience in the auditory sense.

As previously stated, the sense of smell is the first to fail in the death process; followed by the sense of taste, then sight and lastly hearing. Hearing, next to feeling, is the oldest and most perfect of the physical senses. Because hearing seems perhaps the most passive of the senses, people do not as a rule think of controlling it; as a consequence it becomes the channel for much that is negative to reach the brain consciousness. Much can be done toward control by impressing upon the subconscious mind in meditation the fact that hearing is a sacred function. This is indicated in certain early Christian paintings of the Virgin Mary which portray her as conceiving the Holy Child by means of a ray of light from heaven entering her ear. It is representative of her receptiveness to divine wisdom. Thus with the celestial pattern held continually in mind, its mortal replica will be maintained in undiminished strength; not only will physical hearing be maintained intact but inner plane contacts will be established.

“Let there be Light,” was the Divine Fiat which caused the formation of the eye. Earliest man had no eyes, but possessed two sensitive spots in his head which were

affected by the Sun's rays. The Earth was once a part of the Sun. Man then literally lived in the light, his body was luminous and his sense perception wholly internal or spiritual. When the Earth separated from the Sun, man needed external organs with which to perceive the light that was without. Consequently he set about building eyes, under angelic guidance. The eye thus came into being in response to the Ego's need to cognize the external light. In that sense it might be said that light formed the eye and maintains it. Remove the light, the eye ceases to function and blindness follows. The eye is developed fairly early in the embryo, thus indicating its evolutionary age as a tool for the Spirit.

The cavities in the skull which contain the eyes are orbits shaped like pyramids, one and one-half inches deep. At the bottom of these pyramidal orbits are holes through which the optic nerves enter. Six muscles are attached to the eyeball, one up, one down, one in, one out, and two are axes passing from before backward.

All of the senses face a great future development, for our present mode of cognizing the world is scarcely more than peering through a peephole as compared with the superb powers one day to be ours. We do not ordinarily think of the fourth-dimensional consciousness as being sense perception; but occultists know that every sense organ in the body has, as it were, a fourth-dimensional extension which will raise its power to an incalculable degree when we know how to make use of it. At present man sees only the reflection of external objects as they are mirrored upon the retina of his eye. With the development of fourth dimensional vision, he will see *through* objects, inside and out simultaneously; and in addition, he will, by the turning of his imagination, discern the entire history of that object from the time when it first came into being.

All sense organs are the result of the activity of etheric forces. In the case of the eye, it is the Light Ether which is of primary importance. The Light Ether (as also is the

case with the other three (Chemical, Life, and Reflecting) is both positive and negative. The forces active in the positive pole of the Light Ether generate blood heat, while those working along the negative pole produce the passive functions of sight, hearing, feeling, tasting, and smelling; also, they build the eye itself. Color, in all kingdoms of light, is an activity of forces resident in the negative pole of the Light Ether, while the heat-forces in the positive pole cause the circulation of the juices in plants.

Although all the senses are worked upon by forces in the negative pole of the Light Ether, the eye is most affected. Therefore the closer one attunes himself with the etheric forces, the more he feels the rhythms of inner planes and the more he is conscious of inner beauties of form and color. Poets, artists and others of the sensitive type unconsciously learn to work with these ethers to a greater or lesser extent. Beauty is literally in the eye of the beholder, as the poet has stated. It is the difference in individual sensitiveness to etheric impacts that causes objects to appear so differently to different persons. Thus the artist actually sees colors which are unrecognized by the average person. Shadows, for example, that appear grey, brown, or black to the ordinary eye have in them blue, violet, and purple tints discernible to the more sensitive eye of the artist. Similarly, the surface of the sea also reveals a multitude of evanescent tints and shades which to average vision is merely grey, blue, or blue-green. Art students find that their eyes gradually become more and more sensitive to color as they work, proving that the range of the etheric sight can be extended even without occult training. On the other hand, occult students frequently discover that they have acquired this greater degree of color vision without art training.

[ Sight, like feeling, will eventually extend throughout the entire body. Grecian sages symbolized extended vision in the sacred peacock, venerated in the worship of Juno, Queen of Heaven, whose starry eyes are figured in the



peacock fan. "The night has a thousand eyes," sings a modern bard, "and the day but one." Mythology shows that Grecian poets have made similar observations.

Already human sight is changing rapidly due to the electric influence of Aquarius, now close to the Vernal Equinox. This accounts for the wide prevalence of weak eyesight, especially among many children; it also explains why metaphysicians who have otherwise demonstrated so much of health, continue to have trouble with their eyes. Eye "trouble" is really the efforts of the eye to adjust itself to a new spectrum. Metaphysicians will continue to fail in healing their eyesight until they approach the whole subject from this new viewpoint, working not to "correct" what seems to be a weakness, but to encourage the changing vision in accordance with the divine plan.

The sense of taste developed earlier than the sense of smell which belongs to the Third Day of evolution. A child is born with feeling and taste already in evidence; also the brain areas governing hearing and sight. In general, the sense of taste is governed by Taurus. Sweets are perceptible by the tip of the tongue, sour by the edge, bitters by the root and salts by tip and edge.

In common with the other senses taste has a mental function. With the sense of smell, it represents the faculty of discrimination, the ability to distinguish between the real and the unreal, and to segregate and amalgamate both objectively and subjectively. Psychologists have proved that an inordinate desire for sweets often indicates a craving for affection both in children and adults. Children with a strong blood lust have been known to heartily enjoy rare meats which they chew savagely.

The nose consists of two parts, a projection from the face and cavities called nasal fossae. These latter connect with the throat, upper jaw bones, and eyes. The nerves of smell are situated at the top of the nasal cavities. In the act of smelling, air laden with odorous particles is drawn up to the top of the nasal cavities and there impinges upon

the nerves of smell. These nerves are the only exposed nerves in the body and they lead directly into the brain, hence the power of breathing exercises and incense or perfumes to affect brain consciousness. It has been suggested by some scientists that the blood circulation of the brain is regulated by the breath, and not primarily by the heart-beat as in the rest of the body. This again suggests a reason for the efficacy of breath control in mental and spiritual development.

The interior of each nostril or "breath-gate" is composed of cartilaginous substances. These gates are avenues for the dual breath force and are under control of a vital center located at the root of the nose. This is one of the most highly sensitive points in the whole body. The two great nerve currents, the Ida and Pingala as they are known in oriental occultism, unite and blend their masculine and feminine forces in this center. The breath carries forces that stimulate these vital nerve currents. The masculine or positive nerve force has its origin in the right nostril at the root of the nose, passes through the cerebellum and the medulla oblongata, down the right side of the spine and terminates in the coccyx. The Ida, the feminine or negative nerve current, originates in the left nostril at the root of the nose, following the same course down the left side of the spine and terminating in the coccyx.

The forces of the Pingala, mingling with the essence of breath in the right nostril, strengthen objective manifestations. The forces of the Ida and breath essences of the left nostril strengthen subjective manifestations.

Deep and sustained breathing through the right nostril, together with a mental effort to picture desired outer conditions, is an effective exercise in the demonstration of health, success and plenty in the physical world. Deep and sustained breathing through the left nostril, together with the imaging of desired inner plane manifestations, is potent to produce demonstrations of power in the subjective world.

Immoderate use of breathing exercises, however, should be avoided, especially by Western neophytes. It has been found that the Western student, with his usual impetuosity, tends to overdo in this and in other matters, and thereby sometimes brings about nervous disorders, heart trouble, lung trouble and other reactions of an unpleasant nature. Oriental teachers in America now warn their occidental students of the dangers of Indian breathing exercises; and in India itself there have been considerable changes of method in recent centuries. The ancient exercises given by such teachers as Patanjali in the yoga Aphorisms are no longer wholly countenanced even in India among modern Indian neophytes, who are today coming under the materializing vibrations of the West.

Concerning the sense of feeling, science has never located its center in the brain—this for the reason that feeling is no longer localized but permeates the entire body. Being the earliest of the senses it has also attained the highest degree of perfection. In future Earth Days, neither sight nor hearing will manifest through localized brain areas, but will encompass the body as feeling does now.

On the First Day of our evolutionary career (the Polarian Epoch of the Earth Period), the Ego's mortal envelope—it could scarcely be termed a body—was a filmy structure of no symmetrical proportions. It was made of etheric substance which as yet bore no impression of the intricate sense organs it was one day to develop. The only evidence of a sense organ was an organ of feeling, a cone-shaped object that protruded from the top of the head and was sensitive to gradations of heat. Later this organ became centered within the head and is now the pineal gland; but before the brain and nervous systems were evolved it was the localized organ of feeling or touch.

The five senses correlate with the five Root Races as follows: 1. Polarian, hearing. 2. Hyperborean, feeling. 3. Lemurian, sight. 4. Atlantean, taste. 5. Aryan, smell.

The expansion and amalgamation of the five senses into the "sixth sense," the voice of the soul, is to be the special development of the Sixth Root Race. We now call this sixth sense. *Intuition* and it is sporadic in its appearance but will then be subject to full voluntary control.

Thus there will be two more senses developed by the Sixth and Seventh Root Races: the sixth sense of Intuition, or spiritual knowing, and the seventh, which is a space-sense that will endow man with the faculties and characteristics of a superman, fulfilling the prophecy of St. Paul, that man is (in the light of spiritual evolution) "An heir and a joint heir with Christ." The amalgamation of mind and soul will be the glorious consummation of the final or Seventh Root Race, thus ending the present Day of Earth manifestation.

#### THE LUNGS

Paracelsus says there is a star behind every process going on in the human body. Mercury is the star behind the lungs; as Mercury works in the heavens so do the lungs work in the human body. As Mercury symbolizes polarity, so also do the lungs, being double. The perfection of Mercury in the body will be accomplished by the power of the breath.

The lungs are light spongy organs filling the cavity of the chest. An air-tight receptacle for the protection of the lungs is formed by the breast bone in front, cartilages of ribs on each side, the vertebral column in the back and the diaphragm below. The lungs are surrounded by a network of air cells. The air they contain is separated from the blood only by the thin walls of cells and capillaries. It is here that oxygen passes from the air into the blood and carbonic acid gas escapes from the blood into the air. It is here also that the etheric record of man's every thought, word and deed passes into the blood to be carried

to the seed atom in the left ventricle of his heart.

The lungs, in common with other bodily organs, bear their impress of wrong living in the past. They are governed by the Hierarchs of Air, which element correlates with the mind. A hardening or crystallization of the mind in the past tends toward the same effect upon the lungs in later lives; such diseases as tuberculosis and pneumonia are the result.

Polarity is manifest not only in the organ itself but in its function, which shows both a positive and a negative mode. This is true of breathing, one of the body's rhythmic processes. In-breathing is feminine or sustaining and image-building, whereas outbreathing is masculine or formative on the plane of materialization. God breathed the breath of life upon or within the body of man and the soul was born. Speech, a manifestation of breath, also exhibits dual qualities, the tone being feminine and the articulation masculine. In language, vowels are feminine and consonants are masculine.

While the larynx is the voice box, the lungs, bronchial tubes, trachea, throat, nose, and mouth are all instruments for the sacred power of the spoken word. This power, and its control by means of rhythmic breath, will be more fully understood and utilized in the New Age that is dawning.

“The breathing process is an inspiration made real.” It is truly sacred when rightly understood, since it tends toward the transmutation of physical substance into spirit. Breath is the great body harmonizer. In deep and regular breathing there is a continuous flow of the sacred Fire Mist of the spinal canal into the cavities of the brain; this greatly accelerates the power of demonstration on both the mental and physical planes.

God breathed on form and a living soul was born. Christ Jesus breathed upon His Disciples and they were transformed into supermen. Poverty, disease and death, the world's greatest ills, will be overcome when man has

learned to use aright the wonderful power which is latent in the breath.

### THE LARYNX

A great sage has wisely said: "The soul's goal is spiritualization at the cost of the body." The larynx is one of the most important and intricate of bodily organs, and one in which further spiritualization in the body will produce notable changes. It is a box-shaped apparatus composed of cartilage; it constitutes the upper part of the windpipe and contains the vocal cords, hence called the voice box. The power of speech is attained only when the larynx has developed to a vertical position. That of the animal kingdom is horizontal.

From the fishlike appendage of Atlantis to the intricate and finely attuned organ of speech of man today is a tremendous evolutionary step. The larynx is formed of the holy essences of creative substance, therefore its close interrelationship with the reproductive organs. To waste this substance either in idle words or in sensual living means a weakening of both mind and physical body. This is the reason for some systems of spiritual schooling requiring disciples in training to observe regular periods of silence.

The larynx is destined to become the wine cup of the New Age filled with the transmuted essences of life. This is the "new wine" to which the Master referred at the Last Supper and of which He promised to drink in the New Day. With the evolution of this new cup or Flower of Life in the throat, man will again be able to speak the words of power which are creative. It was by the use of this spoken word that Adam "named" or aided in the formation of the archetypal patterns for the animal world. It is also here that the Mason will learn to find the Lost Word of his esoteric rites.

The larynx, the heart, and the spinal cord form the path of the Fire Mist in the body of the Initiate as this force rises to the head.

## THE HEART

“As the sun worketh in the planet so does the heart in the body.” The heart is a hollow muscle situated in the throat between the lungs. It is about the size of an adult’s closed fist. The heart is divided into four cavities, the two upper are termed auricles and the two lower ones are ventricles. Esoterically the right auricle and the left ventricle are most important.

The entire organ is continuously contracting and expanding about sixty-five to sixty-seven times a minute in the normal adult. When it contracts the blood is forced into the large blood vessels; when it expands the flow is from the blood vessels into the heart. The direction of the flow is determined by valves so constructed that blood goes only in one direction. Between auricles and ventricles are other valves which allow the blood to flow from the auricles into the ventricles.

The heart beats from the fourth prenatal month until the Ego leaves the body in death. It is a double pump, two streams flowing out with each contraction and two streams flowing in with each relaxation. There are also two distinct cycles of blood from the heart through the body. The heart therefore has two distinct sounds, the second being shorter and of a higher pitch than the first.

When studied clairvoyantly the heart is found to be truly the Sun of the body. As the Earth, which is outwardly dark, is composed of nine layers with a central light flaming always at its core, so the heart possesses nine etheric layers with a luminous rose or lotus blossom in their midst. When a life is set to the rhythms of universal consciousness this heart flower expands and its petals gleam and sparkle with lights of blue and gold. When, however, the love life of the individual is impure or selfish these flower petals tend to bend backwards and curl upon themselves. This stultification of the heart-flower reacts physically as heart trouble in this or later lives. Paracelsus well says that disease can be intelligently studied only

in connection with Karma and the invisible bodies of man.

The heart is the doorway of spiritual illumination. Few persons qualify for higher spiritual work because the heart of the vast majority remains spiritually unawakened. The words of the Christ, "Behold I stand at the door and knock," is an ancient saying from the Mysteries referring to the illumination of the heart by powers of the Divinity within. Holman Hunt's painting of this subject reflects a similar image as it appears in the Akashic records where it may be seen by anyone qualified to observe these inner-world pictures.

The heart as the center of the blood circulatory system is important as the seat of life. In the left ventricle is the seed atom of the physical body. This is man's *book of destiny* out of which he is judged by the Recording Angels at the end of an Earth Day. The Forces of the Cosmic Christ focus in the heart and there is a mysterious relationship existing between the great Angelic Heart of Leo and that of man. There is a profound significance in the fact that Leo rules the heart. The heart as the life center pulsates in myriad colors during the life of an individual. It is the last part of the body to die. To clairvoyant sight this last center of life appears just before death like a luminous spark of violet light after all life processes are stilled.

Heart consciousness is most active during hours of sleep. The important work of the aspirant is to *impress this heart memory upon the brain mind. Man must learn to think with his heart.* This will only be possible as love becomes the animating motive power of life. David, the poet-seer, understood these inner truths when he sang: "As a man *thinketh* in his heart so is he."

Paracelsus writes: "As the Sun worketh in the planet, so does the heart in the body and the Moon in the brain." The mystic marriage is alchemically described as the uniting of the Sun and Moon. When complete regeneration is accomplished, a stream or nerve current of light will flow along the pneumogastric nerve, coordinating the



powers of head and heart. This is the mystic highway traversed so often by Mary and Joseph between Bethlehem and Jerusalem. All the principal events in the Bible are also found within the body of man.

The heart had its origin when the group soul consciousness of humanity was under the tutelage of the Hierarchy of the Lion. It appears in the twelfth day of foetal development. We learn from embryology that the segmentation of the ovarian cell is cruciform, being bisected by both a direct and a transverse line. The mystic also knows that it is from the essences of this first cell that the heart is evolved. Thus the heart is born to bear the cross of the Spirit, which is formed out of its experiences and causations. The heart of the entire human race bears the signature: "If ye would be my disciple, you must take up your cross and follow me."

The heart is septenary, consisting of two auricles, two ventricles, and three higher divisions. In gill-breathing animals such as fish, the heart is a single pump with one auricle and one ventricle. In the embryo of higher vertebrates there is a recapitulation of this stage which remains permanent in amphibia and reptiles. In birds and mammals a partition forms that divides the original ventricular chamber into distinct right and left ventricles. The heart represents the spiritual triad or higher nature; the liver and spleen the lower quaternary. Hence these words of Paracelsus: "The secrets of all nature are in the four elements. For the Ternary with the magical Quaternary produces a perfect Septenary. When the Quaternary rests in the Ternary, then arises the Light of the World on the horizon of Eternity."

It is only in the deep-sleep state, when the Ego slips away and goes beyond dream consciousness, that the Spirit is truly awake and the language of the heart may be impressed thereon. This is the state of consciousness described by George du Maurier in his novel, *Peter Ibbetson*; he calls it the art of "dreaming true." Some few have developed this consciousness during hours of sleep and

have in this way been able to touch and remember occurrences belonging to past incarnations. It is to be remembered that this ability consists in reading heart records through the development of heart consciousness. In his eagerness to acquire the ability to read the records of the past, the average student of inner world Mysteries considers it a mind process and thinks that the preparatory work must be done upon his mental equipment. This is a mistake, accounting for the fact that so few realize this attainment. Work must be done primarily, not upon the mind but upon the heart. This truth throws added light upon the fact that the Supreme Wayshower stressed always in His teachings the *power of love*, and reiterated the occult maxim that *love is the fulfilling of the law*.

Heart consciousness is Initiate-Consciousness. An ancient author quoted by Strabo thus describes the Mysteries: "The soul experiences at the period of death the same feeling that it does in Initiation. The very words answer to each other just as the reality does. In Greek 'to die' and 'to be Initiated' are expressed in almost the same words."

The esoteric student learns to center his aspirations for Initiation in the heart as the orthodox Christian does his hopes of conversion. The supreme spiritual work is an effort to center consciousness, both waking and sleeping, in the heart. 7

This organ is destined to become the generative center of the body, with the spiritual fires playing only between the organs of the head, the larynx, and the heart. Jacob Boehme portrays this attainment in his diagram of the Tree of Life, the roots of which are embedded in the heart while the fruit-laden branches spread out from the head.

Man in his finite state is a *personality*. In his progress toward infinity, his ultimate goal, he becomes, through the processes of spiritualization, an *individual*. *Persona* means a mask. It is the personality, functioning as the lower man, that hides the true light of the Spirit within.

The mass mind of humanity lives primarily in the

personality, hence mankind has lost knowledge of the perfect body it could have. Disease and death have become man's portion. The ideal of human evolution is the Christ Man. In such a one perfection of function and harmony of bodily rhythms are firmly established. Radiant health and a vibrant, full, and free life are his portion.

“Man possesses the power both to comprehend and appropriate all things imagined possible with God.” it has been said. In the practice of universal life the very atomic rhythms of the body are changed. So long as man is swayed by personality, low-vibrating atoms responding to hate, fear, sensuality, and the like intermingle promiscuously throughout his body and affect its various organs and functions in accordance with their nature. With the beginning of spiritual life, the atoms attracted into his body vibrate to key-thoughts and key-emotions of purity, love, courage, and reason; and his body is regenerated in the fusing of like with like.

As hatred is overcome by love in the consciousness, molecules of hate are ejected from the body and molecules of love take their place. As fear is overcome, dark and shadowed molecules are displaced by those of radiant light, for bravery and courage are accompanied always by a rare shining. So as man gradually learns to elevate himself closer to the Christ ideal in his daily life he is at the same time building a new body keenly responsive to soul impacts—a veritable body of Light, singing in every atom.

Apropos of this is the following inspiring paragraph by the late eminent Theosophist, Dr. G. de Purucker: “The old Welsh bards used to sing that to the initiate's ear there comes the audible song of the growing grass, and that the circling of the orbs in the sky was likewise heard as a great musical symphony; and verily it is so. Even our modern scientists today tell us that every smallest electron is in constant movement, and that every movement of a substantial particle is accompanied with a sound, a note, a musical note indeed, so that every smallest atom sings its own characteristic enduring hymn; and hence

any combination of atoms forms a harmony, a symphony. Thus it is that even our physical bodies, had we the ears to hear it, would be heard by us as a wondrous symphonic orchestration of music, a marvelous symphonic melody of musical numbers."

The principal organic systems of the body may be correlated with the *mystic number nine*.

The correlation is as follows:

1. Organs of assimilation and renovation.
2. Organs of elimination.
3. Organs of circulation and distribution.
4. Organs of locomotion.
5. Organs of objective senses.
6. Organs of life essences.
7. Organs of nervous systems.
8. Organs of mentality.
9. Organs of subjective senses.

Each of these organic systems has been preceded by aeonic cycles of evolutionary unfoldment, and a like process of expansion and perfecting lies ahead. "Man is as yet but little lower than the angels and it is not yet known what he shall be."

Writes Edward Thompson in *The Youngest Disciples*: "Thatch well this House of Nine Doors, close its entrances! See well to the roof before the tempest of old age assails it, cover the roof with the thatch of repentance. Make the rafters of pity for all living things so that they may be at peace with thee. Over it lay the palm leaf of meditation on the noble eightfold path . . . with the tar of self-forgetfulness bind all things together . . . And as rain falling on a well-thatched roof falls to the earth outside so will passion fall from the roof of this mind and body."

*If we were to photograph a person's brain at the moment of birth and then photograph also the heavens lying exactly over the person's birthplace, the latter picture would be of exactly the same appearance as that of the human brain. As certain centers were arranged in the latter, so would the stars be in the photograph of the heavens.—Rudolf Steiner.*

*There is a star behind every process going on in man. All the forces of heaven have their corresponding activity in those parts of the body that are expressive of their powers.—Paracelsus.*

*If we were wise enough to understand occult anatomy we would see the signature of the Sun, Moon, Planets, and Zodiac upon every organ and its functions.—Alan Leo.*

## Chapter VI

### ***The Two Nervous Systems and Their Relationship to Spiritual Development***

*All natural art and wisdom are given by the stars to men and all wise men are disciples of the stars. The constellations are our natural teachers.*

#### OCCULT ORIGINS

It has been well said that man has two bodies, one formed by the elements and one by the stars. Occult anatomy deals with both.

The two nervous systems of man's body-temple may be considered as a most wonderfully fashioned and complicated musical instrument upon which the human Spirit plays the glorious symphony of life. They were wrought largely under the guidance and supervision of the Lords of Form, the zodiacal Hierarchy of Scorpio, though not without the assistance of certain other important celestial Hierarchies.

In the Third Creative Day, designated by occult scientists as the Moon Period, the Lords of Wisdom (Hierarchy of Virgo) and the Lords of Individuality (Hierarchy of Libra) worked upon the embryonic bodies of mankind, which at this time possessed latent sense organs and glands that were the product of the great Second Creative Day, called the Sun Period.

The Lords of Libra worked particularly to modify and harmonize the currents of desire. The sympathetic nervous system had its origin in the Third Day and was at first perceptible to inner vision as desire currents. Later it was given form under the activity of the Lords of Form. This constituted the whole of man's nervous system in this early stage of development. It was the only one provided

for in the Moon Period. Not until the present Earth Period was the voluntary system added to the sympathetic. This system, too, was at first no more than currents of desire. These currents still remain though they now manifest through the chemical substance composing the nerves of the body and, as lines of force and color, they can be seen clairvoyantly flowing through the nerve cells.

When we realize that the nerves originate in desire, we come to understand that the all too prevalent "malady of nerves" which afflicts an ever-increasing number of people every year can be healed only through the purification and transmutation of their desires.

The sympathetic nervous system is "feminine" or "negative" in nature. It has a large cluster of nerve structures located in close proximity to the heart; thus the heart is intimately connected with desire. The heart being the center of love life, also correlates with desire, mental confusion and emotional tension. Hence, nervous afflictions and heart maladies nearly always appear together. Often what is needed is repose of mind and spiritual contentment in contemplation of the divine order of the spiritual universe. When that is attained, healing results.

Astrologically, the heart is ruled by Leo, which is presided over by the Lords of Flame. The work of this Hierarchy in the regenerative process is to emanate a powerful spiritual force, fiery in nature, consisting of divine Love. This force unites with the Libran impulse toward universal beauty (harmony) flowing through the desire currents, their union culminating in the transmutation of desire. The desire body itself, as such, comes under the direct governance of Archangels correlated to Capricorn. It was the Lord Christ, supreme head of the archangelic Hosts, who came to earth to cleanse its psychic atmosphere of all base and unclean desires and to teach mankind the way of purity. "Blessed are the pure in heart," said He, "for they shall see God."

The cerebro-spinal or "masculine" nervous system had its origin, as previously stated, in the Fourth Creative

Day—our present Earth period. It was given under the direction of the Lords of Mind (Hierarchy of Sagittarius). This nervous system is at present largely objective and materialistic in function. It, too, received form through the Hierarchy of Scorpio, Lords of Form, who in general have charge of the entire evolutionary process of this Earth Period. The voluntary nervous system assumes the major role in our present epoch, for it is the channel through which the mind is brought to its highest perfection. Through enlightening the mind the Ego becomes fully awakened. As a result of such development, which will occur in this Fifth or Aryan Epoch of the present Earth Period, man will in some degree unfold the lowest or mental aspect of his threefold Spirit. Through painful experience the I AM in man is gradually acquiring dominion over his concrete mind, the activity of which is focussed in the cerebrum. It is at the same time also extending its dominion into the precincts of the sympathetic system.

The sympathetic system may be said to be in a state of slumber but it will begin to come into its own in the Aquarian Age that we are now entering, for when the vernal equinox falls in Aquarius the autumnal equinox will fall in the opposite sign of Leo, the sign of the heart. The constellations where the equinoctial points fall are always of primary spiritual significance for the entire race. At the present time, the sympathetic system is the field of activity for great spiritual Beings who control our evolution. In the Aquarian Age a start will be made toward the conquest of this invisible domain of destiny in the human body; the sympathetic nervous system will be stimulated or awakened to heightened activity and mass consciousness will center in the deeper truths of Initiation. "There is a force called Kundalini," writes an ancient sage, "which is ever engaged in the work of creating the universe. He who knows Her will never again enter the mother's womb as a child nor suffer old age." When this comes to pass, the altar lights will again be aflame within the Holy of Holies.



The nerve cell is composed of two layers of tissue, white and grey. The white constitutes the nerve proper, and the grey the ganglion. The latter contains the nucleated nerves which are centered in a protoplasmic substance containing phosphorus. Phosphorus is a fire substance, in occult terminology, and acts as a center of attraction for the life principle emanating from the celestial Sun—the latter being the occultist's name for the invisible part of our solar orb, the vehicle of the Christ Spirit that we sense as electrical emanations.

The phosphorus content of the nerve cells is proportionately less during childhood and in advanced age; it is at its maximum during the prime of life.

This phosphorus or "fire essence" can be increased or decreased according to the mental bias of the individual toward spirit or toward matter. Material science naturally approaches this important element entirely from the physical viewpoint. Soon, however, its power as a spiritual magnet will be better known, and both meta-physician and material scientist will come to understand more fully just how and why a spiritual transmutation of the physical body is essential to real and permanent spiritual progress.

#### THE SEVEN FLOWER CENTERS OF THE SYMPATHETIC SYSTEM

When in the Third Day (Moon Period) the sympathetic nervous system was fashioned by Angels under the direction of the Lords of Form, it was molded from plastic desire substance. In it were created seven centers which can perhaps best be described as nuclei of spiritual force. They were designed as focal points for spiritual forces operating in the field of what psychologists of today call the "subconscious" and which occultists know will sometime be part of the "conscious." Past, present, and future development of mankind may be traced in the two nervous systems.

The sympathetic system consists of a double chain of nerve ganglia on each side of the vertebral column, the fibers being distributed to the heart, stomach, intestines

and other vital organs. These ganglia extend from the head to the coccyx. There are forty-nine in all, seven of them being of special importance.

The sympathetic nervous system, as noted, originated in the Moon Period, together with the beginnings of the desire body, and was the means whereby Angels and Archangels manipulated the sleeping consciousness of nascent human beings, projecting into them feelings and pictures, like a dream which impelled toward activity. This was the basis of animal instinct, for humanity of the Moon Period, though wholly different from our own Earth Period animals, was animal-like in nature.

It is this sympathetic system which gives rise to sensation. Man's consciousness does not now extend deep enough to enable him to follow cosmic processes mirrored in the sympathetic system, which even today recapitulates in a way the dreamy picture consciousness characteristic of Moon Period beings. The nerves of this system live a kind of dim inner life because in them are reflected cosmic forces which still guide the race as a whole in its evolutionary journey.

In the ancient Mysteries the Initiate was taught how to lull the voluntary nervous system to sleep and then to dip down into the sympathetic where he would see, as in a state of luminosity, the silent workings of mighty cosmic laws. This was right and proper in most ancient times, before the mind was sufficiently awakened to make the positive development possible; but by the thousandth year before Christ, in the middle of the Arian Age, this method was already becoming outmoded, and the work of the Christ set it aside altogether. The rending of the initiatory veil of the temple signified that the deep Mysteries of the cosmos were to be viewed in a new way, the Christ Way, by means of the positively developed spiritualized mind. The sympathetic system is the vantage ground of the so-called subconscious mind. It is subconscious because its functioning is controlled by cosmic intelligences of which the human being is today seldom aware. The time will come

when all of the work done now by cosmic agencies will be done by the individual himself, in full waking consciousness. No one today, except the high Adepts, can see and control every vital function of his body, the beating of the heart, the digestion and assimilation of food, the conversion of food to energy and its use in the muscles, etc. This belongs to the future, but is foreshown in the laboratory when the chemist analyzes the elements that go to make up food and the physiologist analyzes the processes by which the body lives. Some day all such knowledge will be part of the human being's equipment from the moment of birth, and then there will be no more *subconscious* operating through the sympathetic system.

The colorless solar energy which pervades space is absorbed by man's vital body (etheric double) through the etheric spleen. From the etheric spleen solar energy flows to his solar plexus, the principal psychical center of the feminine system, whence it radiates through all the nerves of the body. By its refraction through the minute prisms of the vital body it is transformed into a beautiful rose color, recognized by clairvoyants as the characteristic color of the etheric double. The vital body is useless unless the nerves are charged with this vital solar fluid. The sympathetic cords rise from a center above the medulla oblongata, where esotericists can observe the initial intricate work of forming a second spinal cord. Corroborative of this is the interesting fact that within recent years post-mortem examination of the bodies of two spiritualist mediums revealed a clearly marked, though secondary, spinal cord.

The sympathetic nervous system is also the particular vantage ground of the vital body, as the solar fluid specialized by the vital body galvanizes these nerves into action. The vital body is for obvious reasons the vehicle through which Angels work in humanity toward the perpetuation of the species; through it are channeled the "life" forces, both those which sustain an individual body and those which sustain the race as a whole.

Ordinarily, sensations transmitted by the sympathetic nervous system are not as acute as those transmitted by the cerebro-spinal. It is part of the work of Initiation to become conscious of all vital processes, to feel and to know exactly what is going on in the body at all times, even during sleep; and by this knowing to learn the "arts and crafts of body-building" (basic to the true Masonry) whereby man is able to create immortal bodies in which to dwell upon earth.

The subconscious mind has its seat in the vital body and controls the sympathetic nervous system. It in turn governs the digestive and respiratory organs that build and restore the dense body, the circulation, glands, secretions, and excretions.

The sympathetic nerves are the nerves of organic life. They take charge of digestion, absorption and circulation. They regulate the rate at which the secretion of the glands is produced and attend to the processes of nutrition, repair and excretion. When the cerebro-spinal nerves are at rest, the sympathetic system is busy repairing the wear and loss which muscular and other tissues have undergone in the production of activity. It superintends the vegetative or organic life of animals and functions continuously.

#### THE SEVEN FLOWER CENTERS AND THEIR ESOTERIC ACTIVITY

*Hear thou the Voice of Fire! That Holy and Formless Fire that darts and flashes through the hidden depths of the Universe and Man—Hear thou the Voice of Fire.*

The seven vital centers which we have mentioned as being of major importance in the functioning of the sympathetic nervous system are largely dormant, but under the stimulation of positive spiritual thought they can be developed into whirling vortices of light and power. By reason of their shape, size, color, beauty, and fragrance they are likened to flowers; the Rose or Lotus blooming upon the cross of the body has come to be a familiar expression in mystic fraternities.

It is by a complete and unswerving dedication of self to the higher life, by the development of unalterable courage rooted in God, by the vision which never for a moment loses sight of its goal, that one can achieve the necessary development for awakening the spiritual body centers and bringing them into blossom.

The *First Center* is located in a bundle of nerve fibers which lies just in front of the sacrum bone at the root of the spine. Awakening this center is perhaps the most difficult of the entire septenary series. The sacrum is the "stone which the builders rejected" and it is also the stone which, according to promise, must become the "chief corner stone of the temple." This center is under the restrictive influence of Saturn and it requires the trained will and determined effort of the aspirant to bring about its awakening. It is described in oriental phraseology as "the crimson petalled lotus where the Kundalini sleeps." This is the center of that sacrificial fire of which all *outer* sacrificial ceremonials are but reflections. Its color in latency is a dull smouldering red; this changes with vivification into red-orange lights. With its increased activity comes awareness of certain psychic faculties.

Sir Edward Avalon writes in his *Serpent Fire*: "If the aspirant is devoted to the Lotus Path with heart unperturbed and concentrated mind, and dedicates his life to the Path which is pure, is faultless, is secret, he surely will find the Way of Liberation." He adds further, "The Root Center is beautiful by reason of the flowers strung upon her."

The *Second Center* is in the solar plexus which is the power center of the sympathetic nervous system. Here orange is the primal color. The blending of red and orange, together with sunlight yellow, makes this a glorious dazzling seat of light.

The solar plexus is the true seat of the "subconscious" mind in so far as the vital processes of the body are concerned. So long as this center is under the control of high spiritual powers, such as those which have guided the race

evolution in past epochs, it is productive only of good. But when, by an act of will, the embodied Ego severs himself from the control of the Race Spirit, then he himself begins to control the cosmic forces which play through this center, and difficulty frequently results. Eventually the high Initiate has full and complete conscious control of the workings of the solar plexus forces, and with it he has full control of body processes which are open to his awareness. It is said that the full conscious and positive awakening of the solar plexus accompanies—or carries with it—the power of astral journeyings together with a clear and voluntary memory thereof; the reason for this being that the “subconscious” mind is being eliminated, and the “conscious” mind is taking over full control of the personality, both by day and by night. The “conscious” mind is the egoic awareness. Max Heindel has said that just as the chief work of the Atlantean Epoch was the receiving and awakening of the germ of mind conferred upon infant mankind by the Lords of Mind from Sagittarius, so the chief work of the Aryan Epoch is the development of the reason and logic of the Ego.

Some occult schools also describe a center located at the navel, but this “lotus” is really closely associated with the Root Lotus mentioned elsewhere. It is more active in the female body than in the male, having a special relationship to the Life Ether forces active in gestation and in the psychic processes attendant upon it. All such activities are under the control of the Race Spirit at the present time, but when the Ego “conquers” the various lotuses of the sympathetic system he brings their activities under the free control of his own will.

The *Third Center* is in the spleen, the center of solar energy for the entire nervous system. Its color emanation is rose tinged with green, and its forces vitalize all body organs. When fully active this center possesses the radiance of a pure, clear emerald stone, and has been described as being like “silver rain clouds with a young sun shining through.”

The corresponding spiritual aspect, when "conquered" by the egoic will, is heightened sensitivity, with the developments which naturally follow upon heightened sensitivity, such as awareness of "flying through the air" in the soul body when the physical body sleeps.

The *Fourth Center* is that of the heart. It is a glorious golden star that illumines the entire body and its radiations extend beyond the body in an aureole of glory. The power conferred by this heart center is memory of past earth lives; when fully functioning it gives ability to see into the future as well.

The "heart flower" also enables an individual to pass unharmed and at will through the four elements and to control all subhuman entities dwelling therein. The luminosity of the center has been likened to the "steady flame of a lamp in a windless place." In its highest phase it shows golden rose petals touched with clear azure. This center marks the dividing line between the material and the spiritual. When one's heart is illumined, he is numbered among the spiritually elect, and can at will call invisible hosts to his aid.

The *Fifth Center* is in the throat. It is the center which develops under spiritual forces released in creative art, in the pursuit of beauty and through all high and holy inspirational impulses. Its color is azure, tinged with silver. Its power is that of healing through the spoken word. It has been said of the mystic vine that it sprouts in the sacrum, produces leaves in the solar plexus, buds in the heart and comes to full blossoming in the larynx. The following statement is well worth profound meditation: "Four are the grades of speech. Three are hidden and motionless—men speak the fourth."

The *Sixth Center* is located between the eyes near the root of the nose. This is the supreme power center of the body and is used to achieve far-reaching objectives by both the Brothers of Light and of Shadow. When this center is spiritualized the body is lifted beyond the vibrations of mere mortality, and its possessor is numbered among the

great Compassionate Ones who live only to serve and free mankind. Its color has been compared to the uniting of the Sun and the Moon. It is also at this point that the crown of thorns becomes a halo of light. Here one partakes of the "ocean of nectar" and is numbered among the immortals.

The *Seventh Center* crowns the top of the head. The crown jewels of a king are an outer semblance of this attainment of true spiritual kingship. All gross elements of the body are transmuted by the high potency of its pure white light. The personal now becomes completely submerged in the divine. Heaven and earth unite. This is the source of that Light which shineth in darkness and which the darkness (of the unilluminated) comprehendeth not. This great center is the insignia of Adeptship. One possessing it is both birthless and deathless. In the words of John's Revelation: "He goeth no more out." In the outpouring of Heaven's effulgence all the colors of the spectrum have been merged and dissolved. The human has become divine. Man has attained unto godhood.

A word of caution: Let the student note that although these various centers are spoken of as "in the body," they really relate to cosmic forces playing through the egoic consciousness. The work of Initiation consists of the Ego's becoming aware of these cosmic forces and also of himself as a cosmic being in a spiritual universe inhabited by other cosmic beings, able to use the cosmic forces wisely and at will. The key to all positive spiritual development is the formula, "I AM THAT"—Virgin Spirit made in the image and likeness of God—which Moses learned from Egyptian hierophants.

#### THE CEREBRO-SPINAL OR MASCULINE NERVOUS SYSTEM

As previously stated, it was in the Fourth Creative Day known as the Earth Period, that the cerebro-spinal or masculine nervous system was built under the guidance, principally, of the Lords of Form (Scorpio) and Lords



of Mind (Sagittarius). These exalted Beings worked primarily in and with mental substance in the formation of the cerebro-spinal system as the Lords of Individuality (Libra) had employed Desire World material in building the sympathetic system. The principal center of this system is that most complicated and intricate organ possessed by man, the human brain.

When the sympathetic nervous system was developed sufficiently for the cosmos to be reflected in it, the cerebro-spinal system was added. The nerves springing from it connected with those organs which would adjust man to the outer world—eyes, ears, and other media of sense perception. All of the senses belong to the Ego, or Spirit, which has built a set of organs to connect it with each of the worlds in which it functions.

Man no longer acts as a mirror for reflecting passively the laws of cosmic evolution, for interaction has been set up between the reflected world and the external world. Until the cerebro-spinal system was built, the desire body lived its cosmic life in a state of dull consciousness under the instructive guidance of the animal soul by means of the sympathetic system and through pictures which man saw within himself.

The clairvoyant faculty which man once possessed in its negative phase will be recovered, on a higher level and in a positive aspect, when, by a special process, the activity of the cerebro-spinal nervous system is brought under the full control of the will. It is this nervous system which is the avenue for the egoic consciousness and the desire body forces under its control. Because the desires run amuck, the voluntary nervous system plays the role of a destroyer, warring against the vital or life forces active in the vital body and sympathetic system. Before the Ego can “conquer” the lotuses of the sympathetic system, it must first conquer the desire nature and lower mind, which at present act as a unit. The lower mind must sever its tie with the desire nature and yield to the rule of the higher mind or Virgin Spirit-as-Ego. Then the Ego is

able once more to make use of the cosmic pictures which are reflected in the sympathetic nervous system and the ethers connected with it. The sympathetic nervous system is the stronghold of the vital body, while the cerebro-spinal nervous system is the stronghold of the desire body.

In future epochs, after the cerebro-spinal system is perfected, a technique will be given to all Initiates in the Mystery School whereby the subconscious processes, which are today under the control of cosmic intelligences, are brought into subjection to the Ego itself, as a self-conscious cosmic being. This does not mean that the Ego revives the ancient animal-soul consciousness, with its dreamy reflections of the outer world, but that in the man of tomorrow an instantaneous reflection of the whole surrounding universe will respond to an awakened god, reigning in divine authority over the Kingdom of Heaven within and the Kingdom of Nature without.

Herein is to be found a vast field for psychiatric operations and investigations. Our present-day discoveries touch only the outermost borders.

The most important work so far accomplished in the present Earth Period under the supervision of the Lords of Form and Mind, was the building of the cerebrum or frontal brain, the seat of reasoning mind and creative imagination; hence, the focussing of egoic powers in objective activities. The frontal brain lobe is termed the *intelligence* lobe; it controls the voluntary muscular system. The cerebrum is the principal center of the cerebro-spinal system, and has been described as the "plexus of a thousand branches." This plexus is continuous with the central canal of the spinal cord through which the Fire Mist ascends in occult unfoldment. The cerebrum is located between the four principal intercommunicating ventricles of the brain. This cavity is continuously secreting fluid which is aptly termed the Nectar of Life. In average humanity this sacred life essence is under the influence of Neptune, the planet of Initiation.

"Strait is the gate, and narrow is the way . . . and few

there be that find it," the Book of Books cautions us. This straight gate, this narrow way is discoverable in occult anatomy, clearly correlative to its metaphysical principles. The way extends from the cerebrum to the terminus of the spinal cord. This Way is also a river, the sacred river common to the mythologies of all peoples. It is the Nile of Egypt, the Ganges of India, and the Jordan of Palestine. To its mystic waters the Christed or annointed one must ever come to be baptized. It is also the laboratory of the spiritual alchemist, where he acquires the art of turning base metal into gold.

There are two magic "sperms," the Masters of Wisdom tell us. One is the miraculous white water that is under the influence of the Moon. The other is the glorious golden "sperm" under the influence of the Sun. "The greater the length of time in which they remain in the fire, the more colorful and glorious they become"—a statement corroborating the biblical teaching that "whom God loveth he chasteneth." The uniting of these two "sperms" or essences forms the ever-burning flame that is tended by the Vestal Virgin—also the Fire of alchemical lore, sacred to philosophy and to its Stone. It is the Mystic Swan of the Parsifal legend, the Hamsa Bird of oriental fame, and the mysterious albatross of the *Rime of the Ancient Mariner*.

Ancient sages have always stated that "man himself is both the source and the end, the matter and the laboratory. All the earth contains not so great a mystery and excellence as man reformed by God into His image and likeness."

The head is the precious jewel box of the Spirit or Ego and contains many rare gems which become powerful foci in various transmutation processes whereby the "old man" is put off and the "new man" is put on.

The thalamus, that great ganglion of the inner brain, is located near the center of the head. This part is an important sensory relay station—its medial part is concerned with smell; the lateral part with taste and sensa-

tion. The two parts are separated by the third ventricle. On the posterior side is the pineal gland, the candle or All-Seeing Eye which, when awakened, illumines the entire human temple. On the anterior side is the pituitary gland. These two glands are the two great laboratories for the final transmutation or spiritualization of the masculine-feminine essences as the human temple is changed from "a den of thieves" into "a house of prayer."

The medulla oblongata, located at the base of the skull, is part of the feminine branch and is the conducting medium whereby the spinal cord contacts other portions of the brain. The greatest number of nerves in the body are located at this point, making it the chief repository of nerve force and, therefore, one of the primal foci for spirit inflow and the work of regeneration. Almost all persons will testify to the extreme sensitiveness of this center.

The streams of nerve force intersect in the medulla, causing this point to become the Golgotha of the body, the place of crossing. Nearby, however, is the pons varolii or Tree of Life, whose ascending spires or branches appear to lift symbolically toward the higher center of regeneration or Resurrection, the pineal gland or crown of the head. Thus we bear within ourselves the Way of Calvary and the glory of the Resurrection.

#### THE BRAIN AND THE REPRODUCTIVE ORGANS

Most important of all the nerve centers are those belonging to the head, represented symbolically in Golgotha, the place of the skull.

We learn from the writings of the Church Fathers that certain heretical schools of the city of Alexandria in Egypt taught that there was in the brain a mysterious fiery essence, which found its way downward through a certain reed-like channel to the organs of generation; and they said this fiery force, which they likened to a serpent, must be raised up again to the head.

Now most modern occultists state that the Root Cen-

ter of the force known as Kundalini (which is also identified with its channel, called the Sushumna), lies at the base of the spine; but there is another classic text in the scriptures of India which states that the true home of this force is in the brain. Evidently the Christians of Alexandria followed this latter teaching, and it is significant that Max Heindel says little or nothing of the centers in the lower part of the body, but places primary emphasis upon the centers in the head. Where Max Heindel says that the Life Spirit (Christ Within, a Living Fire) is reflected in the vital body, these ancient Christs said that the life fire passed downward from the brain, and, under the guidance of the archangelic Race Spirits, was used to further the racial goals of evolution. The Christian Initiate conquers this fire-force, and leads it upward once more to its true home, the brain. There the threefold Virgin Spirit reigns as the Ego; and of this Ego Max Heindel says again that it is threefold when viewed from the physical world, but that it is really ONE, the Virgin Spirit itself. Similarly, the fire forces which work through the nerve centers seem, from the vantage point of the physical world, to be divided into seven, or forty-nine, or even more, but it is in reality ONE, the Fire Force of pure Spiritual Being.

← The analysis of the brain and its parts, therefore, is of the utmost importance to the neophyte, and all that has been said of the values of the various nerve centers applies with double force to the centers of the brain.

Every least segment of the nervous system has its corresponding center in the brain, a fact well known to physical science, and which is also known to the occultist.

The ability to function fruitfully on inner planes is dependent upon the purity of the life of the investigator. This implies far more than physical chastity; it involves purity of mind and motive as well. Nor is physical chastity to be identified with mere denial of sex expression through repression. Great harm has been done by fanatics who believe that out of such negative absti-

nence will flower a spiritual life. The occultist knows that one is not really chaste until chastity flows outward from the soul, naturally and easily, for as long as the sex nature is a source of trouble even though controlled, it is not being fully transmuted into the higher functions of the Spirit. Chinese sages say that the man who finds pleasure in vice or pain in virtue is a novice in both. This is true in the work of regeneration. He to whom the path of discipline is still painful is a novice and should know himself as such; only when it is a joy may he be confident of the Crown.

There is a close interaction between the brain and generative organs. The brain and larynx were both built by means of conserved creative force. Sex energy is creative on whatever plane it is used. By conservation and transmutation this mighty power will enable man to produce beauties and marvels in both art and science that are as yet undreamed of. When the sacred Fire force is lifted to the brain it fills man, not with passion, but with light. Those who attain to this state are heralds of the new race.

In the Earth Period, when the dense body of infant humanity was being formed, a part of the sex force was directed upward and used for building the brain, larynx, and nervous system. The present mode of generation belongs to a transient phase of man's evolution. The organs of generation will eventually atrophy and their function will be taken over by the heart, larynx, and brain. Creation of forms will be by mental or psychic means, that is, by the projection and materialization of images. We have a hint, very imperfect to be sure but still a hint, of how this may be accomplished in materializations through spiritistic channels. Such spirit materializations, while helpful as hinting of future marvels for the race, are no more like the perfect process than the first airplane is like the jet-propelled type now coming into use and giving wonderful promise of interplanetary travel. Mystery Schools are already in possession of this knowledge, and their great Adepts are able to create bodies for themselves

out of cosmic substance through their own will and imagination, thus demonstrating their mastery over life and death.

The intimate relationship between the brain and the creative organs is shown by the fact that excessive abuse of the latter invariably weakens the former, this by reason of the fact that both draw upon the same energy for functioning.

The Christ gave this inner teaching to His Disciples in the parable of the barren fig tree, recorded in the twenty-first chapter of Matthew, verse nineteen. The fig tree is a symbol of fecundity and fruitfulness. The fruit of the tree is reminiscent of the uterus in shape, while the leaves are reminiscent of the male organs of generation. The words of the Master in condemning the tree, "Let no fruit grow on thee hence-forward forever," have reference primarily to the present mode of procreation. Man now *generates*; the new race will learn *to create*. At present the process of procreation is largely physical; it is destined to become predominantly spiritual.

The "sacred bone" or sacrum is a triangularly shaped bone wedged in the lower part of the back between the hip bones. This is the symbolic altar of the body-temple. In close proximity sleeps the serpent power which, when awakened, becomes the great sacrificial Fire whereby as each gross element is refined, its corresponding sense is likewise rarefied and sensitized. This Fire "leads and lifts upward those forces which in mortal man drag downward and are opposed to the divine and celestial essences." Herein we find the analogue of all biblical burnt offerings and altars of purification.

When this mystic Fire reaches the pineal gland or Crown, the forces of the lower and higher natures, the human and the spiritual man, are united. The Great White Work is complete. In very truth, "the Father and I are One."

Instead of seeking physical gratification when conscious of the surging impulses of the lower nature, if an

earnest aspirant will focus his imagination upon whatever he desires to create—whether it be a poem, an invention, a picture, a musical composition or some material demonstration such as a home or a new business venture—he will find that a double purpose is served. The objective demonstration will be accelerated and the process of regeneration within his body will, at the same time, be noticeably stimulated.

Meditation upon high and holy subjects has power literally to transform forces impregnating the sexual fluids; for these fluids are really carriers of etheric force, the true creative agent. By consciously directing pure love currents from the heart into the creative centers of the brain, sexual activity may be transmuted into activities of mind and spirit, with a corresponding birth upon the mental and spiritual plane.

Every cell of the body is, or can be made, subject to absolute control by the mind. It is possible to raise the body above the forces of physical passion and to center one's whole being in the currents of spirit.

The lotus blossom in all its purity and loveliness, having its roots in dark mud at the bottom of a pool, sending up its stalk through water and flowering on the surface in sunshine and air, is strikingly symbolic of the anatomical mystery known biblically as the Red Sea—that sea of the lower nature whose life forces the Spirit lifts and transmutes into a soul (flower) body of luminous beauty and fragrance.

#### THE TWELVE CRANIAL NERVES AND THE SEVEN VENTRICLES

The twelve pairs of cranial nerves are an important factor in the process of regeneration. These nerves pass from under the surface of the brain through openings in the bones of the cranium and distribute their fibers principally to the organs of sense. These nerves are:

1. Olfactory—nerves of smell.
2. Optic—nerves of vision.



3. Motor oculi—movers of the eye.
4. Trochlear—supplying one of the muscles of each eye.
5. Trigeminal—supplying muscles of face, lower jaw, and tongue.
6. Abducens—supplying muscles that turn eyeballs outward.
7. Facial—sending fibers to muscles of the face.
8. Auditory—the nerves of hearing.
9. Glosso-pharyngeal—supplying larynx, tongue, pharynx.
10. Pneumogastric—supplying larynx, lungs, heart, stomach, liver.
11. Spinal Accessories—terminating in muscles of the neck.
12. Hypoglossal—supplying muscles of the tongue.

At present these nerves are concerned largely with the physical well-being of the body, but as the work of the senses is extended through development of clairvoyance, clairaudience and related psychic faculties, they will become veritable carriers of light, making the body responsive to inner-plane vibrations in a degree entirely unknown to the average person at the present time. We cannot repeat too often that man is indeed a god in the making.

The spiritualization of these twelve pairs of cranial nerves is described in Revelation 21, 22.

Of these twelve pairs none are more important in spiritual work than the pneumogastric. This pair has been called by those who know something of its future development the "passage-way for the Breath of the Holy Ghost." It is the royal highway between Jerusalem (heart) and Bethlehem (head) by which the Spirit withdraws the forces of the seed atom at the time of transition called death.

As the heart awakens spiritually, its powerful emanations will be lifted to the brain by way of the pneumo-

gastric nerves. The brain will then be an organ for contacting spiritual truth directly; it will not be the limited instrument it is now, by which we see at best "as through a glass darkly." The brain of the spiritually illumined is the "upper chamber" dramatized biblically in the story of the sacred communion of the Last Supper. The twelve Disciples are represented anatomically in the twelve pairs of cranial nerves.

Six of the cranial nerve pairs are related to the cerebrum or masculine brain, and six to the cerebellum or feminine brain; in the same way the Disciples are grouped into two classes, six of whom respond to the masculine or occult, and six to the feminine or mystic ray.

In describing the illumination of the brain Paracelsus writes: "In the brain pan of the skull lies a mysterious nerve substance like some cloud piece in materialization. This cloud substance in the brain is the center of the etheric brain and is influenced by the firmament on one side and by the miasma of the earth on the other side."

There are seven principal cavities or ventricles in the brain concerned principally with true spiritual development. The Disciples also were divided into groups of five and seven, the seven being the most deeply occult and highly advanced of the immortal Twelve.

The seven brain cavities have sometimes been called the seven-stringed lyre of Apollo and also the Seven Great Harmonies. Elsewhere we designate them the Harp of David. They are filled with an ethereal essence highly responsive to spiritual impulses. In them heart memories may be captured.

These seven ventricles bear the same relationship to the cerebro-spinal system that the seven flower centers bear to the sympathetic system. They represent the supreme development of the system to which they belong.

The first, second, and fourth of these cavities lie right and left of the center of the brain. The third lies below them and connects the pineal and pituitary glands. The fifth is below the third, in the region of the cerebellum.

The sixth originates in the brain, passes downward through the spine and ends opposite the sacro-coccygeal ganglion at the spine's end. The seventh, the consummation or synthesis of them all, also lies in a cavity of the skull.

The highest initiatory development of our time is concerned with the cerebro-spinal nervous system and the seven head centers belonging to it. As one progresses spiritually these cavities glow with light increasingly until, in the fully developed, they iridesce in the septenary colors and sound forth the seven tones belonging to the sevenfold planetary chain.

Large areas of the brain are not used at present because we have no thoughts or emotions as would arouse them into activity. As we extend the range of our power of thought and feeling, however, the Ego will awaken these areas and begin to express itself through them; then, by means of convolutionary depths, such areas will be greatly increased. An idiot has a very small area because his brain is almost devoid of convolutions. An intelligent individual is continually adding to his brain area by multiplying and deepening the convolutions. The illumined Initiate who has fully developed the organism of the head as described brings into activity brain areas usually dormant.

The processes of evolution which are constantly lifting mass consciousness to higher levels are also purifying and refining the physical bodies of the race. There were many practices common a century ago which are considered barbarities today. From the study of anthropology we learn how the human form has developed from a gross bestial object into the light, graceful body we know. The Spirit has reshaped and refined the physical body until it has become a suitable temple for its indwelling. The ideal body was demonstrated by the great Way-shower in the mystic Rite of the Transfiguration.

The spinal cord is continuous with the medulla oblongata through the foramina or large opening in the occipital bone. The cord is enclosed in a canal formed by the bones of the vertebral column. A very minute canal,

## THE SPINAL CORD AND THE PATH OF THE FIRE MIST

continuous with cavities in the middle of the brain, runs through the center of the cord. This is the path of the Fire Mist that operates under control of Neptune, the planet of divinity. When fully functioning it lifts men into godhood. The rising of this Fire Force makes for the true resurrection, and in it is the significance of the words of the Christ: "If I be lifted up I shall draw all others unto me." Jacob's ecstatic ladder-vision describes a like experience. Every cell and atom of the body is made new as the Fire ascends.

The spinal cord has thirty-one pairs of nerves which convey motor impulses from the brain to the voluntary nervous system. These correlate to the days of the solar month. Animals have twenty-eight pairs of spinal nerves. These belong to the feminine or sympathetic nervous system and are correlated to the days of the lunar month. The animal kingdom is governed by the Moon, symbolic of the feminine Spirit of Nature. Spiritualizing the last three pairs of nerves will enable man to contact a higher force than he is aware of today. To accomplish this is part of the work assigned humanity in the present Earth Period, the powers of the cerebro-spinal nervous system being evolved with the aid of the Lords of Form and the Archangels.

The spinal cord is divided into three parts which enclose a hollow tube. The two nerve ganglia rising on either side of the cord belong to the sympathetic system. The nerve essence flowing through the left ganglia, when spiritualized, becomes a flaming light essence termed, in oriental phraseology, the *Ida*. That which flames through the right ganglia is called the *Pingala*.

The *Ida* and *Pingala* are feminine and masculine or negative and positive nerve forces that accompany the ascending Fire Mist. These dual currents are oppositely polarized. They meet and cross each other in each of the spinal chakras or flower centers of the body, before reach-

ing their final terminus in the two spiritual organs of the head, the pineal and pituitary glands. In their ascent these currents, by means of their intersections along the spinal chakras or flower centers of the body, before reaching Mercury, the ancient Grecian insignia of the Staff of Life.

In his *Serpent Power*, Sir Arthur Avalon describes the forces of the Ida as being pale, of the nature of the Moon and as very embodiment of the essence of nectar. The Pingala, he continues, is of the nature of the Sun, and is a lustrous red like the filaments of the pomegranate flower. He saw in a vision the Ida and Pingala together with the "central Fire" in a trembling aura of rosy light and azure combined with a white fire which rose up to the brain and flamed out in a winged radiance on either side of the head.

He describes the central path of the Fire Mist as being subtle as a spider's thread as it pierces all the lotuses along the spinal canal. "She is beautiful like a chain of lightning and shines in the minds of sages. She is the awakener of pure knowledge, the embodiment of all bliss, and her true nature is pure consciousness. She unbars the entrance gate into the region of Ambrosia, the land of the Immortals. She is the world-bewildering. She produces melodious poetry. Her lustre is like the strong flash of young lightning. Her murmur is like the indistinct hum of swarms of love-mad bees. She shines in the cavity of the canal like a chain of brilliant lights."

Here within the body-temple is to be found the origin of the Rosary devotions. Heaven and earth unite within man; all mysteries of the celestial and the terrestrial are recapitulated in him.

The word Kundalini means "coiled." In the unilluminated this powerful cosmic Fire force sleeps coiled in the lower part of the spine. The secret of awakening and lifting this sleeping Fire Mist was first taught in China, having been brought into that country by the priests of Atlantis—which explains why the dragon is symbolic of

the writhings of the great stellar forces above and of the spinal spirit Fire in man below.

With the final stage of this ascension of the powerful threefold spiritual force—the Ida, Pingala and Kundalini—to the head, and its transmutation in that holy of holies, there appears a gleaming triangle of light which encloses the third or spiritual eye, the pineal gland. In this fact we discover the occult origin of the well-known Masonic symbol of the All-Seeing Eye enclosed within the Triangle.

As illumination proceeds, the Fire Mist grows and expands in intensity and volume. The newly awakened Fire flashes from center to center and we quote, “The aura around the Ida is like moonlight and pale azure. The Pingala is illumined with a soft rosy opalescence. The Kundalini is transmuted into an intense golden white fire which curls upward spirally.” As one becomes increasingly freed from physical desires, the serpent within gradually uncoils and the illumined one finds himself encircled, as it were, by a fountain of fire.

Biblically, this serpent mystery is shadowed forth in the Brazen Serpent which Moses bequeathed to Israel and which for many centuries was guarded in the sanctuary of both Tabernacle and Temple. The Mystic Serpent is found also in the Orphic Mysteries centered in Dionysus, in the Egyptian Osiris worship, in the ancient Taoism of China and the Rajah Yoga of India, to mention but a few of the aspects under which the Serpent Wisdom (“Be ye wise as serpents”) is known in the world.

By means of this serpent fire the illumined and regenerated body is made, that body which is destined to rival in beauty, color, and fragrance the most perfect blossoms of the plant kingdom. The significance of the knights' mission to find for King Arthur a bride with a “flower body” is to be found in this attainment. It is the secret of the betrothal of the pure and holy Sir Galahad to a maiden bearing the symbolic name of “White Flower.” And, as we have mentioned previously, it is the secret of the title *Jesus of Nazareth*, which points

to the Master Jesus as the Flower of the Sons of Seth.

The beautiful mystic medieval legends all conceal definite steps and degrees belonging to the path of exalted spiritual Illumination and Initiation. They are threads of gold in that magic carpet of wisdom bequeathed to the ages by Solomon the Wise, whereon the soul may fly to adventures of pure spirit above and beyond all mortal limitations. There is but one Wisdom for all ages and all men, that Wisdom which was in the beginning with God, and it was God, and without that Wisdom nothing was made that was made.

### THE SPINAL CORD AND ITS THIRTY-THREE SEGMENTS

The spinal cord is composed of thirty-three vertebrae or segments. It is between these that the nerves branch out in pairs to all portions of the body.

There are seven cervical vertebrae which correlate to the seven planets: the first to Saturn; the second to Jupiter; the third to Mars; the fourth to the Sun; the fifth to Venus; the sixth to Mercury; the seventh to the Moon.

In the thorax, attached to the ribs, are the twelve dorsal vertebrae. These correlate to the twelve zodiacal signs, also to the twelve stones set up by Joshua which "remain for a sign unto this day."

The five lumbar vertebrae are in the middle of the body and correlate to the five elements, Fire, Earth, Air, Water, and Ether, collectively under Libran rulership for in these the balance of the body is maintained.

The five remaining segments which fuse into the coccyx are under Scorpio, signifying the serpent path whereby, through regeneration, we may attain the wisdom of the gods. This is summed up in the words of Christ, "Be ye wise as serpents and harmless as doves."

*Thirty-three* is a mystic number and totals the years required for David's Initiateship by which he could unite the forces of Israel and Judah (head and heart). Only thus could he rule as king in Jerusalem (City of Peace)

for the cabbalistic forty years. *Thirty-three degrees* should confer upon the Masonic candidate a similar spiritual status. This mystic number marks also the consummation in perfection of the earth mission of our blessed Lord, Christ Jesus.

We have shown how, since the brain and reproductive systems are connected by means of the spinal cord, regeneration is accomplished by the lifting of the creative energy from the lower to the higher centers of expression. The energy which formerly was used for sense gratification or for the perpetuation of the species is then used for spiritual self-expression and the upbuilding of the Ego. In the Bible this work is indicated in the parable of the Wise and Foolish Virgins. "Keep your lamp trimmed and burning" is the soul slogan for everyone who aspires to enter the conditions of the New Age in which pure living is an absolute essential. To keep the body filled, not with animal passion but with celestial Fire, is the prerequisite of Initiation, for it is only as the spinal Fire substance is uplifted that the brain centers may be awakened to their new activity; and that activity, like the flame of a lamp, must be sustained by the oil which is carefully conserved in right living. Nor is all danger eliminated when this stage is reached; if, after the lamp of the Spirit has been lighted in the brain, the individual returns to the ways of the flesh, his resulting state is worse than his unawakened condition, even inviting insanity and death.

The threefold refining Fire of regeneration which ascends through the spine is under the astrological rulership of the fiery triplicity. The purification begins in the generative center under Sagittarius; it rises to the heart under Leo; and thence ascends to the head under Aries. As this sacred Fire rises in ever-increasing volume and intensity it unites with a luminous ethereal substance emanating from the blood, and the amalgamated essences then awaken the spiritual eye, the optic thalamus, demonstrating the ancient maxim, "If thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light."



The following by Jacob Boehme is also pertinent to the subject: "As the light goeth forth from the Father, into the Son wherefore ariseth the Holy Ghost, working through the different senses; if the spirit is pleased therewith, it bringeth forth the same to the heart, and the heart giveth it to the passages or issuing forth powers from the entire body." Note, too, Paracelsus: "The red blood from the Lion and the white gluten from the Eagle, when you mix and coagulate them according to the old process—you have the tincture of Philosophers."

In these lines we have the secret of transmutation. Redeemed and emancipated from evils and limitations that now hold mankind in bondage, the race of the New Day will be motivated by love. It will have experienced the new birth by water and by fire referred to by the Master when instructing Nicodemus. The process of occult redemption leaves its mark upon man. It was that, not mere wounds and bruises upon his body, to which Paul referred when he declared, "I bear upon my body the marks of the Christ." These marks were changes in his inner life and development; they were the glorious radiations of a regenerated, redeemed man, one who had become "an heir and a joint heir with Christ throughout the ages."

#### THE BLENDING OF THE TWO NERVOUS STRUCTURES

When the mystic Marriage Rite has been consummated by the Spirit, the two columns of the human body-temple, or the two nervous structures with their attendant organisms, will also function as a completely integrated unit. Man will be lifted beyond the limitations of the sense world. Glorious and immortal, he will have become a bright and radiant Son of the Morning.

As above, so below. God in manifestation is male-female. So also is man, made in His image, masculine-feminine. It is well known to anatomists that the male body carries embryonic female organs and the female, embryonic male organs. In the past spiritual illumination

manifested through the sympathetic or feminine (negative) system, as we have already observed. At present first-hand attainment consists in awakening the centers of the cerebro-spinal or masculine (positive) system. It is the union of the forces using these two systems that will produce the godlike body of the superman, the Initiate hermaphrodite (Hermes-Aphrodite), the perfect masculine-feminine body.

In the book of Job, that great drama of Initiation, Job asks who is able to come to him with the double bridle of the Leviathan, a reference to the dual nerve forces in their perfected interaction. The forty-first chapter describes the powers and attributes of one in whom such a condition has been established. In the opening chapter of Genesis we read, "Male and female created he them," in His own image and likeness, all-good. Herein is described the original archetypal Pattern of perfected interaction between the two poles of spirit, which is called in esoteric parlance the exalted *Rite of the Mystic Marriage*.

The seven centers of the sympathetic system, the seven "flowers" located upon the cross of the body, belong to the feminine pillar of the temple; the seven centers of the brain belong to the cerebro-spinal system and are referable to the masculine pillar. The forces flowing through these two systems converge and blend in the larynx, which thus becomes a marriage altar. From this conjunction of powers emanates the Word which is spirit and which is life.

The spiritual evolvment of early man in Lemuria and Atlantis dealt entirely with the centers of feminine force; hence, many leaders of that first civilization were in the main Egos embodied in feminine vehicles, Egos in whom the cosmic Feminine was more active. Thus the apocryphal legends tell us of Heva, the first prophetess, who, under the tutelage of "Serpents," prophesied of this present world. Spiritual evolution in the Aryan races is concerned with awakening the brain centers related to the masculine principle. The Christ (or new Adam) is, therefore, the prophet prophesying "better things of the world to come."

The work of the New Age must inevitably include the blending of the masculine and feminine principles leading toward Initiation and ultimate Liberation.

The seven positive brain centers are reflected, so to speak, in the seven negative or spinal centers. The Western method of development hinges almost wholly upon work with the brain centers. These, when vivified, automatically stimulate into renewed activity the psychic faculties of the sympathetic system, awakening them from their age-long sleep in materiality. But if the work is directed toward the sympathetic system *first*, nothing of value can result from reawakening the old primeval negative clairvoyance of Lemuria and early Atlantis, the "trance" condition which is too little in harmony with modern requirements. Psychological experiments have shown how ordinary people, in an hypnotic trance, may sometimes demonstrate clairvoyance relating to the material world; that is, they see outward conditions of our own present world by means of inward vision. They can describe places and people many miles distant, and they can see the organs of the body. This is the way in which the outer world was first contacted in ancient Lemuria, under the guidance of the Lucifer Spirits who used women as their tools. Consciousness was transferred gradually from inner to outer planes until, in the middle of the Atlantean Epoch, material consciousness had become fixed for most of the human race.

Negative clairvoyance recapitulates this ancient type of consciousness. Under the positive method, using brain centers as foci for the spirit, all necessity for trance is eliminated. No longer is one required to go into trance in order to see what is happening beyond the horizon; he has only to focus his mind in the desired direction and he sees. Thus we read of the Buddha, the Aryan prince-Initiate, sitting at dawn, looking out over the world to discover such souls as were in need of his ministrations.

Through uniting the forces of the two nervous systems there is produced an emancipated spiritual man

characteristic of the New Age. In *Revelation* under the similitude of the Woman clothed with the Sun and crowned with the splendor of the twelve zodiacal Hierarchies, this glorious achievement is depicted for us as John foresaw it.

The steps of this ascension of the Fire Mist correspond to the principal events in the life of the Christ: the Nativity, the Baptism, the Transfiguration, the Rite of the Eucharist and the Mystic Marriage. All are re-enacted within man's own body-temple. It is when the sacred Fire reaches the heart that the veil of Isis is rent and the wonders of both heaven and earth stand revealed.

The following excerpt from A. E. Russell's *Candle of Vision*—this Candle being the pineal gland or Third Eye—is a modern corroboration of ancient lore: "Once at the apex of intensest meditation I awoke that fire in myself, of which the ancients have written, and it ran up like lightning along the spinal cord, and my body was rocked with the power of it, and I seemed to myself to be standing in a fountain of flame, and there were fiery pulsations as of wings about my head, and a musical sound not unlike the clashing of cymbals with every pulsation; and if I had remembered the ancient wisdom I might have opened that eye which searched infinitude. But I remembered only with a half terror the danger of misdirecting this energy, for such was the sensation of power that I seemed to have opened the seal of a cosmic fountain, so I remained contemplative and was not the resolute guider of the fire . . . Normally I found this power in myself not leaping up titanically as if it would storm the heavens, but a steady light in the brain, the candle upon the forehead, and it was revealed in ecstasy of thought or power in speech, and a continuous welling up within myself of intellectual energy, vision or imagination . . . It is the Promethean Fire and only by mastery of this will man be able to ascend to Paradise."

Our modern mystic here wisely stresses the danger which inevitably accompanies the awakening of the sacred Fire Force before the aspirant has been sufficiently fortified

through pure and spiritual living. He also writes: "And indeed this rousing of the fire is full of peril; and woe to him who awakens it before he has purified his being into selflessness, for it will turn downward and vitalize his darker passions and awaken strange frenzies and extinguishable desires. The turning earthward of that heaven-born power is the sin against the Holy Breath, for that fire which leaps upon us in the ecstasy of contemplation of Deity is the Holy Breath, the power which can carry us from Earth to Heaven. It is normally known to man only in procreation, but its higher and mightier uses are unknown to him."

In these concluding lines we find the distinction between the terrestrial man and the celestial man of St. Paul. The one is the dust man belonging to the Old Age, the other the spirit man who will inhabit the New. The two nervous systems with their transmutations hold one of the important keys to the magnificent new spiritual or regenerative birth.

As the threefold spiritual Fire Mist ascends to the head, it divides and passes through the cranial nerves, surrounding and suffusing the head with a luminous golden halo. This force again unites in the vital center at the root of the nose. One who is able to follow this path of ascending Fire Mist with extended vision observes the triangle of light formed in the head enclosing the pineal gland, now illumined through the pulsating effulgence of the seven ventricles, flashing and sparkling with all the brilliancy of a first magnitude star. It is in very truth a blue-white Sirius, the star diamond of our body-heaven.

Such an illumined one bears within himself the flaming signature of the Song of Songs: "My beloved is white and ruddy and chiefest among ten thousand"—in which high attainment one has found and unsealed the gates of Paradise.

## Chapter VII

### ***The Etheric Body and Its Role in the Sensitization of the Composite Man***

*The mere looking at externals is a matter for clowns, but the intuition of internals is a secret which belongs to physicians.—Paracelsus.*

*The greatest discovery in the next fifty years will be along spiritual lines.—Charles Steinmetz.*

The etheric body (or etheric double as it is also called) properly belongs to the physical realms—for, although not ordinarily visible to physical sight, it is composed of attenuated physical substance. It belongs in fact to the twilight realm of matter where subtle and hitherto little known forces operate just beyond the range of visibility. Into this twilight realm material science is each year penetrating a little farther. Many and wonderful are the inventions which even now result from a knowledge of its forces; for here science is endeavoring to control the mystery of the atom. And here, in a way not yet understood, interior mental forces become externalized into what we recognize as an exterior physical world.

The term "ether" used to describe this borderland of matter is by no means clearly defined, either by occult or by physical scientists. However, occultists have seen the etheric forces by means of their extended vision, and have described them in terms of their own coining. Scientists, on the other hand, have discovered the laws governing phenomena of certain lower ethers and many valuable inventions have resulted. So we know the ethers by their products. New Age science is destined to meet with traditional occult science in this area, with benefit to both.

Marconi, famed as the inventor of wireless, is usually

regarded as the first to use the etheric forces in radio transmission, thus opening the door to that vast development of intercommunication that is so rapidly drawing all peoples of the world into a close-knit human fellowship. These and similar developments in that subtle etheric realm are possible because of the interpenetration of the physical by the etheric. The latter is sometimes referred to as a network of forces.

Just as our planetary body is permeated by these invisible yet potent forces, so is the physical body of man. They constitute a field of force, an etheric double. And just as the Earth's etheric envelope is the means by which universal and solar life flow into our planet, so the etheric double interpenetrates man's physical body and is the channel for the inflow of vitality or life force from the surrounding network of global forces.

Life could not exist on Earth without this etheric envelope, since it is the medium for those forces in nature that animate forms. Occultists reverently refer to Universal Life as the Christ Consciousness or the Christ Life. Again, we speak of the "World of Life Spirit," meaning not only one of the planes of spirit-matter, but also an exalted state of consciousness in which only the One Universal Life is recognized. The Supreme Master of human evolution, Christ Jesus, is the world's outstanding example of what the attainment of this Universal Life Consciousness can mean.

By the Law of Reflection, familiar to all esotericists, this high plane of Universal Life is the prototype of the etheric realm and its manifold phenomena. Things visible and tangible in the etheric realm are signs and tokens of great powers resident in the higher realm of Life Spirit or Christ Consciousness. This means that there is a very intimate connection between the Christ Life and the life forces which operate in the twilight realm of matter, into which material science is now groping its way.

Through mental, moral and physical discipline according to spiritual law, a new etheric sheath is actually

formed within and from the refined essences of the etheric body. This second etheric structure is a prerequisite to all initiatory development. Hence, without the etheric body progress through higher spiritual planes or states in Initiation would be an impossibility.

#### THE FOUR ETHERS

Occult science teaches that the ethers are capable of division into four states or properties of varying degrees of density, each having its own special function.

The densest of the four ethers is called the Chemical Ether because it is the field of activity for chemical forces which underlie the structure of our material universe, and in which is realized the alchemist's dream of transmuting one element into another. It is so nearly material that only a slight extension of sight is necessary to see it. Its basic color is dark blue and it is sometimes observed under the appearance of blue flames as when gas is turned very low; or it may have the appearance of thick mist or smoke. In this ether the New Age chemist will be able to study activities of chemical forces which he knows now largely through their results and not by direct observation. In the human organism this ether seems to take the form of prisms through which the colorless solar energy radiates, assuming a rosy hue. These prismatic ether atoms seem to be embedded in the center of the physical body atoms.

The Chemical Ether is a twofold current possessing a positive and a negative pole or function. (All spirit or life is dual in manifestation, expressing itself as positive-negative or masculine-feminine.) The positive etheric current attracts and builds the physical atoms of the body; the negative current disintegrates and eliminates them. Thus, we may describe the Chemical Ether as a whirlpool of forces into which new molecules flow through the positive pole and out of which old molecules flow through the negative pole. These molecules have actually been recognized in some instances as pertaining to known substances.



To the lay mind this process suggests that vital electricity converts the body into a kind of electromagnet for attracting or holding elements needed in body building and for rejecting or eliminating those not needed, the flow of the life force corresponding to the turning off and on of a current.

The second ether known to occult science is called the Life Ether because it is concerned with the propagation of the species, whether plant, animal, or man. Physical science is eagerly anticipating the day when it can study these life forces at first hand; this it has not yet done, but the time is not far distant when anticipation will be actualized, as now intimated in the remarkable work done with carbon compounds and in new experiments in biological electricity. Yet instruments and inventions alone will not suffice. The scientist himself must become an instrument of investigation. This New Age development is not unknown to a few great modern scientists, some of whom are already partially clairvoyant without being aware of the fact.

The Life Ether is also positive and negative, and in it is to be found the secret of sex; hence, knowledge of this ether will give to biological science control of the sex of unborn infants, and even of adults. Sex hormones are crystallizations in this ether. Differentiation of the sexes as we know it today will seem very crude and primitive to future generations, in whom the ideal masculine and the ideal feminine will find adequate expression without the perversions and inequalities which burden the race today. The vital fluids (including blood) are generally crystallizations in the Life Ether. To the etheric vision, blood is seen to course through veins in the form of a gas which reminds one of the legend that certain Spirits known to oriental mythology were said to have fire in their veins instead of blood. Ancient Greeks thought that the veins of their gods were filled with *nectar* instead of blood, a hint again of the miraculous powers stored in this Life Ether.

These two ethers, the Chemical and Life Ethers, surround and interpenetrate the physical form, constituting

its matrix. The Chemical Ether reveals itself as a **blue** field whilst the color radiation of the Life Ether is a **rosy** or orange hue, which varies somewhat according to **species** and status in evolution but is always present where **life is** to be found. In the plant kingdom it is a delicate **pink-orange**, the color of a certain lotus known in the **Orient**. In the human kingdom it is described as the color of **new-blown peach blossoms**, a deep pink with a suggestion of **blue or violet overtones**.

These are the ethers most commonly observed. **A** higher degree of spiritual perception is necessary for **investigation** of the two higher ethers known as **Light and Reflecting Ethers**.

Motion and color characterize the planetary **Light Ether**. It is an ether which sparkles and flashes with **all** the hues of the rainbow. It is sensitive to the presence of **light**, whether from the Sun or from artificial illuminants, under which it beats or pulsates with a wing-like motion while "seeds of light," many or few according to the intensity of the light, float about in it—probably the **photons** of physics.

Light Ether also has a connection with the blood in human beings, as its positive current infuses the blood with heat and controls circulation as well. The **negative** current operates through the five senses, especially **sight**. Although the basic color of the Light Ether is said to **be** that beautiful golden effulgence ascribed to the **Christ Ray**, it actually displays all the colors of the spectrum. Because this ether is the avenue for **Sensation** (by **vitalizing** the nerves), its sensitization by spiritual thought makes it a channel for sensations which ordinarily do **not** register in the brain—i.e., the eye begins to see colors **not** usually visible, the ear to hear sounds not usually audible, etc. Even the sense of touch is stimulated so an individual can **feel** the etheric currents both in his own body and **in** the atmosphere. Biological electricity is an expression of the negative pole of Light Ether as biological heat is **an** expression of its positive pole.

Most attenuated and refined of all etheric substances is the fourth or Reflecting Ether. This substance is beautifully clear and luminous, and is truly a reflector of eternal Truth as transcribed upon the Scroll of the Ages. It, too, has its positive and negative aspects, but this ether is scarcely physical at all in any known sense of the word. It is the avenue through which thought makes its impress upon the human brain.

The masculine or positive aspect of the Reflecting Ether works through the brain and voluntary nervous system, promoting reason and creative activity; the negative or feminine aspect operates in and through the involuntary nervous system promoting intuition, feeling and memory. The positive pole of the Reflecting Ether is, therefore, the special channel of the Ego; the negative pole, that of the Race Spirit or collective "soul." The Ego is now gradually taking over the functions formerly governed by the Race Spirit, the "God of our Fathers." It is therefore invading the sympathetic system, awakening it to new life under control of individual will, and discovering many new and miraculous powers latent therein. The work of Initiation stimulates both aspects of this ether into new and higher activity. No ether is more important than this Reflecting Ether in the mysterious labor of Initiation.

The Reflecting Ether in its negative aspect is the subconscious mind of nature and of man. It is the blue-white crystal in which the seer reads certain records, but it is not the true Memory of Nature—found in a higher sphere.

#### THE FOUR ETHERS AND THE FOUR KINGDOMS OF NATURE

It is only through inner-plane investigation and the development of superphysical faculties that man is able to stand before the mysteries of nature and comprehend something of their wonders. The distinguishing characteristics of mineral, plant, animal, and man become understandable only in reference to their four-fold etheric struc-

ture. All four of the kingdoms of life on our earth share in the activities of the positive and negative currents of the Chemical Ether, for there could be no dense physical form of any kind without it. The minerals in general, however, do not have a vital principle; that is, they do not live and grow as the higher kingdoms do. Plants, animals, and man have a form, and that form is built up and eventually destroyed by the activity of chemical forces. But they have something more than this: they have a vital principle by means of which they grow and live and perpetuate their kind. This activity is due to the presence of Life Ether in all three kingdoms.

In animals and man we again find two distinguishing principles which plants do not share, namely, the ability to move about from place to place and the generation of blood heat. These are due to the activity of the Light Ether. However, the Light Ether is also active in the plant kingdom to a degree, for solar forces active in the positive pole of this ether circulate the juices of the plant, while the forces operative in the negative pole are concerned in the deposits of color. They have also built a rudimentary nervous system whereby plants experience simple sensations. Some psychic investigators say that plants feel pain and physical well-being much as we do. The late Sir Jagadis Chandra Bose of India set forth extensive data based on experiments in a laboratory in support of this belief.

By sensitive instruments, Sir Bose measured a plant's reactions to varied treatment. For example, he discovered that its reactions were more marked when the plant was torn than when it was cut; furthermore, that these reactions could be eliminated by anesthetizing the plant—the process involved being the same as that used to prevent pain in a human being during an operation: temporarily driving out the etheric body. By experiments of this kind it has now become evident to the physical scientists that plants possess what may rightly be termed a rudimentary nervous system.

Besides elementary physical functions performed by the sparkling iridescent Life Ether, its exceeding sensitivity enables it to register mental impulses that inhere in the next higher or Reflecting Ether. Due to such receptivity it is able to take on the form of the golden Christ Star, which is the basis of all Initiation.

The Reflecting Ether, as we have indicated, is the bridge between soul and body, between soul and Spirit. It is the Bridge of the Gods, the connecting link between the interior soul world and the exterior world of matter. On the one side it reflects the physical world; on the other, the spiritual. The Ego must learn to see only reflections from the spiritual, which is the real or archetypal world. The negative pole of the Reflecting Ether is the storehouse of the Subconscious Mind, not of one man alone but of the race collectively and of the lower kingdoms. Through it all evolution is carried on. Through the positive pole, the active, conscious work of genius, or epigenesis, goes forward, an expression of the forward-moving impulse of Divine Creative Energy.

Already it is becoming a commonplace that, as Dr. Millikan stated, "electricity and matter look like different aspects of one and the same thing. There is proof that electricity is material; there is evidence that all matter is electrical." But even a generation ago only the occultist dared make such statements, among them Madame Blavatsky, who said boldly that *electricity is life*.

In his book, *Why We Behave Like Human Beings*, Professor George A. Dorsey writes, "The problem of the origin of life is locked up in the origin of matter and death—a vague, shadowy line crossed from day to day in the chemical laboratory. *Life* has been produced in no man-made shop; *protoplasm*, the chemical matter of life, has been. It does everything but live."

To Professor Dorsey's statement the occult scientist adds that his "vague, shadowy line" is no other than this traditional etheric realm known for countless centuries to the occult world. It is here that the man of science must

come to know and possess himself of powers whereby he will at long last make protoplasm *live*.

#### THE ETHERIC BODY: ITS COMMON APPEARANCE

Before it is possible for a person to function on super-physical planes he must possess body sheaths composed of superphysical substances. That the Ego does possess such vehicles is the claim of clairvoyant investigators.

The etheric body surrounds and permeates the physical and usually extends a couple of inches beyond it, often having the appearance of a luminous, silvery mist. Many persons can now see this etheric envelope, which proves that evolution is gradually refining our senses and points toward a time when everyone will possess faculties of clairvoyance. A number of colleges and universities have made interesting experiments along this line with the surprising result that about one-third of the students were able to see the outlines of the misty body herein described.

Although the etheric double appears vapory and insubstantial, its substance and function are very real and very important to life in the body. Through it alone the vital essence of the Sun, the Solar Ether (invisible sunlight), is able to reach the body. Without it the latter would be inert and incapable of function.

The student who is intent upon observing the etheric double for the first time will find that the most auspicious occasion for observation is where someone is standing before him under the stress of high inspiration—for example a minister, a lecturer, or singer. On such occasions the etheric body grows beautifully luminous and expansive, giving to many their first authoritative proof of the existence of these finer sheaths of the spirit. Revelations such as this, coming unsought and unheralded, have inspired many to investigate the mysteries of the inner worlds.

#### THE ETHERIC BODY IN HEALTH AND DISEASE

The principal function of the etheric body is to serve both as a receiving set and a transmitter for Solar Energy

which enters the body by means of the spleen. The well-being of this etheric sheath is necessary in the processes of assimilation and excretion; hence, an abundance of fresh air and sunshine are prime essentials to health.

No argument is needed as to the need for sleep if the body is to be kept vibrantly attuned to health-giving powers of the universe. It is during sleep that the greater part of the process of restoration takes place. The reason for this period of seeming unconsciousness being Nature's greatest restorative is found only upon inner-plane investigation. It is known to the occultist that during sleep the Ego actually rises out of its body, although in an unconscious condition as a rule. During this separation from the body it becomes thoroughly permeated with the life-giving forces of the inner worlds. If it were possible to dwell consciously in these life-giving forces at all times, awake or asleep, we should be immortal—for the inner planes are the true Fountain of Youth closer to us than hands and feet, if we but knew how to avail ourselves of its life-giving waters.

The more highly sensitized the two higher ethers become by reason of the spiritual life of an individual, the more easily does that person attune himself to these vital forces and the longer do the effects of restoration remain with him. Thus occurs a paradox. Ofttimes in a crisis a so-called frail person whose life is centered in eternal values can pass through the ordeal valiantly, whereas a more robust individual largely living a life of the senses will break completely. The sensualist draws so heavily upon the life forces of the etheric body that they require replenishment more frequently, which accounts for their not being available in time of need. Paracelsus spoke truly when he said that the healer who deals only with the visible body is concerned with but half a truth and will never be able to find conclusive answers to the problems of health and disease.

When the Ego and its sheaths have been restored by the vibrant rhythmic life forces circulating through the Desire World, those forces then work upon the two lower

etheric connection must be re-established; hence, the long period of time often necessary for recovery from its effects.

The question is often asked, Why do we not become conscious outside the body when we are forced out under anesthetics? The answer to this question involves knowledge of the after-death condition. Immediately after passing from the body in death, practically all persons are asleep for a period of time which varies according to the temperament of the individual. Materialists who believe that death ends everything may remain unconscious for weeks, months or even years because of a sort of self-hypnosis. Eventually, however, they do awaken. When forced out of the body by anesthetics the Ego is in a sleep similar to that which follows death.

It is only in the case of persons who are already on the threshold of initiatory work that consciousness continues, as reported in rare instances where an individual found himself completely awake outside his body while an operation was performed upon the unconscious dense body lying on the operating table. Often, too, we hear of "astral journeys" being taken under such conditions. These experiences, however, come only to sensitives who will awaken quickly on the inner planes following death. It must be remembered that the anesthetic trance seldom occupies more than a few hours—scarcely long enough for the Ego to awaken on inner planes.

#### EFFECTS OF PAST CAUSATION ON THE ETHERIC BODY

The etheric body may well be designated as the "tally sheet" of the Ego. All the varied experiences of vast cycles of earth lives have left their record upon the etheric sheath. Here the clairvoyant can study the effects of past sins and past good, former sorrows and former joys. All are indelibly inscribed upon this shining scroll.

Human races and civilizations rise and fall with a regularity like unto that of ocean tides. As the ebb of degeneration is about to set in, its first mark appears in



ethers. Being replenished, the latter automatically restore the physical body—of which they are the matrix, the source and sustainer of its life. The phrase “to radiate health” is applicable only to anyone whose etheric body is in a positive or healthy condition, for then this body truly does radiate lines or rays of silvery, misty light in all directions. These are felt as an exhilarating force by all who come within their immediate area of influence.

In illness the lines of force of the etheric body droop. If the illness be prolonged or chronic in nature, the etheric body becomes emaciated and the lines of force lose their vibrancy and elasticity. In cases of nervous depletion “holes” appear in the ethers just over the affected areas of the physical body.

To maintain a condition of health, the etheric body must vibrate in harmony with the keynote of the archetype of the physical body, which in turn vibrates with the keynote of the indwelling Ego. If this keynote is disturbed or gets out of tune, the vital sheath can no longer perform its proper functions and ill health may ensue. The desire body is a prime source of all disease. This sheath is also called the “astral” or “emotional” body; in it commonly invisible feelings, sensations and emotions take on visibility to clairvoyant sight. Fear, worry, anger, and lust are among the principal causes for lack of attunement between the Ego and its incarnational sheaths. *Be still and know that I am God* is a powerful remedy with which to restore the subtle rhythms to their pristine attunement in Spirit.

Anesthetics deaden or extinguish the sense of pain because they sever the connection between the archetype and the etheric body, forcing the etheric body partially out of the physical. If this process is carried too far death results, as is well known. The unconsciousness induced by an anesthetic is, therefore, not at all the same as the unconsciousness of sleep which is restorative and causes no break between the archetype and the etheric double, the latter remaining in normal interpenetration of the body. After unconsciousness has been produced by an anesthetic the

the etheric body of the race. Here also may be found the reason for certain so-called incurable diseases, such as leprosy or tuberculosis. Misdeeds unexpiated or made right in the past have left their record in the etheric mould and must work their way out for liquidation. The fear, hatred, and lust of past incarnations are bearing fruitage today in widespread suffering and sorrow.

It is said by reputable occultists that the self-same atoms of matter are used again and again by a reincarnating Ego, and this would apply with equal force to the ethers. The "young" soul makes but little impression upon the substances in which he works. The more advanced the Ego, the easier is the task of impregnating the ethers with its own individual rhythms. Since at rebirth the ethers thus impregnated are automatically attracted to the Ego which impressed its forces upon them, we have an explanation in part for the resemblance between successive incarnations of the same Ego. This also explains why it is easier to trace incarnations of an advanced Ego, an "old soul," than of one less advanced.

#### THE ETHERS: THEIR SPIRITUAL FUNCTION

As the two lower ethers are media for transmission of life and vitality to the physical body, so in like manner the two higher ethers are media for spiritual forces constituting a matrix for a spiritual or *soul body*. Living a life of spiritual aspiration automatically attracts these two ethers, with their luminous blue and gold coloring. They suffuse the entire body of an illumined individual and surround it as an aureole of light. In the words of John, such an one appears to be walking *in the light as He is in the light*.

In many works of occult fiction the Initiate appears clothed in robes of blue and gold, indicative of the beautiful soul body of one who has attained to high spiritual status.

No phase of soul development is ever lost by an Ego

during its long incarnational progress. The essence of its soul experience is forever retained by the Spirit. When a new body is assumed for another incarnation, this spiritual essence is the magnet by which like is attracted to like. Thus it is that evidences of an "old" or "wise" soul are readily discernible even in early years. In our time, the *infant prodigy* has become a familiar phenomenon. When such a child is studied clairvoyantly, its head is seen to be surrounded and permeated by bands of woven light composed of Light and Reflecting Ethers attracted to this particular Ego during many lives of spiritual endeavor. Many early artists were possessed of inner sight. The halos they depicted about the heads of Christian Initiates in childhood—the Virgin, the Child Jesus, John the Baptist, and others—were actualities and not illusions. As such a child develops, and years become avenues for further spiritual progress, these bands of light about his head unfold and extend over his entire body, later spreading out on all sides in a radiant auric mantle. This is a glorious vision to the seer. Even to those who cannot as yet see, the mere physical presence of an illumined one brings a benediction.

Everyone possesses an etheric body, composed of the two lower ethers, the outline of which is easily detected in a semi-darkened room by many observers; but the scintillating radiance of the soul body, formed by the two highly attenuated ethers, is discernible to the very few only. In the first place, this soul body is not often developed to a point where it is visible to one with a high degree of spiritual vision. Secondly, where it is so developed, few have awakened the inner faculties with which to see it. The vision required comes by trained and sustained concentration, and such concentration is acquired by only advanced unfoldment.

As previously stated, the Chemical and Life Ethers work particularly with the physical body. The colorless Solar Ether enters through the etheric spleen and then passes upward into the solar plexus where the seed atom

of the etheric body is located. The forces inherent in the etheric seed atom distribute this ether throughout the entire nervous system. This etheric substance is the particular sustaining element of the nerves, and when the latter are functioning properly they appear to be suffused with a silvery rose mist. Previous mention has been made of the fact that depleted nerve force is evidenced by the appearance of open spaces or dark "holes." These usually appear over nerve centers, for these centers are focal points where etheric substance is massed to be rayed out along nerve channels of the body.

The two higher ethers, Light and Reflecting, in their physical aspect enter the human body by way of the brain. They pass into the lungs and are taken up by the blood, thus reaching the heart where the seed atom of the physical body is located. These two ethers play an important role in the transmutation of the blood and the refining and spiritualizing of physical body atoms.

As the processes of body spiritualization continue, the Light and Reflecting Ethers are propelled by the force of the etheric seed atom in the solar plexus to gain entrance into the lower part of the spinal cord. Having united with the forces centered there, they ascend like luminous threads of light to the head.

Each of the four ethers has a particular seat in the physical body where its forces center and from which they radiate. The densest of these, the Chemical Ether, centers in the heart, its operations governed by the seed atom of the physical body located in the heart.

The Life Ether (the propagation ether) operates from the solar plexus, the "sun" of the lower part of the body. At this center the seed atom of the etheric vehicle has its point of contact with the physical envelope, a fact which suggests to us something of the importance of the solar plexus relative to health of body. It is not possible for the life forces to be maintained without the assistance of the solar plexus which is, in very deed and truth, the body's center of vitality.

The two spiritual ethers play a dual role: each has a physical as well as mental-psychic function. The Light Ether correlates to the desire body with which it has an affinity, and it is rooted in the seed atom of the desire body located in the liver. Since the Light Ether is the channel for sense perception, we have here a suggestion as to the psycho-physical origin of the ancient cult of liver divination and of the belief that the liver was the seat of the soul. In the process of spiritual awakening the Light Ether begins to vibrate in the pituitary gland, the "feminine" organ of spiritual impulse, thus opening vision into the inner planes.

The Reflecting Ether has its root in the seed atom of the mind situated near the frontal sinus. Here is the entrance into the sanctuary of the body temple, the adytum of the Ego who has learned to build body-temples through long incarnational ages. In spiritual awakening, the Reflecting Ether vibrates to the keynote of the pineal gland, the "masculine" organ of perception commonly known as the "third eye." Since this ether is the channel of memory and for powers of the subconscious mind, its awakening confers the faculty of *remembering* past lives, while the awakening of the Light Ether and pituitary gland confers the power of *seeing pictures* impressed upon Akashic Records.

#### THE ETHERIC BODY AND THE SILVER CORD

The silver cord is the connecting link between the Spirit and its earthly body. The links composing this cord are formed of inner-plane substance of varying degrees of density. Something of the importance of the silver cord is indicated by the existence of a large body of symbolic literature on this subject. The twelfth chapter of Ecclesiastes in the Bible is a notable example.

The Masonic Craft gives much valuable information relative to this cord under the symbolism of the cable tow. Albert Pike states in *Morals and Dogma*, "Man after the fall was left naked and defenseless against the just anger

of Deity. Prone to evil, the human race staggered blindly onward into the thick darkness of unbelief; bound fast by the strong cable-tow of the natural and sinful will."

Pike's statement has reference to a time in the dim distant past when human Egos were first being brought out into phases of objective manifestation. It was then that Jehovah God literally ensouled the expanding human Spirit with His own life principle, the basis of all evolution in form. All humankind was then connected with this great and brooding Over-Soul by certain tenuous gossamer threads of projected spirit substance. By this connective link Jehovah was able to guide and direct the evolution of the human race.

Since the "fall" into mundane conditions, this tenuous cord no longer binds man to an external God, but has become the means whereby the God within, the Spirit, guides and controls its outer body sheaths.

In man's current stage of evolution the silver cord begins its development during the first four months of prenatal growth. There are at present three parts of this cord in all adults. In this connection it is interesting to note that the Brahmans of India are at a certain time invested with a cord of three strands, so arranged as to make three-times-three, and representing, as does the cable tow of the Masons, the growth and function of the tripartite silver cord.

The first appearance of the silver cord during the prenatal epoch is as an etheric projection from a seed atom of the embryonic heart. The second is a projection from the liver, composed of desire stuff. These two strands grow toward one another, meet, and unite at the focal point of the etheric seed atom in the solar plexus. This union occurs in the fourth prenatal month and marks the first contact of the incoming Ego with the objective world; it is commonly called the *quickenning*. From this time the prospective mother is conscious of the indwelling life and the incarnating Ego is conscious of outer-plane rhythms, but in a dim and dreamy way.

After birth begins the development of the third strand of the silver cord, consisting of mental substance and rooted in the center of the forehead. This third part of the cord grows down through the body to the liver where it meets the second part already rooted in the liver since prenatal days. Their conjunction marks the age of maturity (approximately twenty-one).

During waking hours the tripartite cord ordinarily remains twined around the solar plexus; but in sleep, when the Ego rises out of its dense body by way of the head, the silver cord, being attached to the higher vehicles, rises with it and may be seen projecting from the top of the sleeper's skull. When the Ego is sufficiently spiritual to take "soul flights," the cord is visible as a shining thread of varying thickness stretching from the soul body to the dense physical body lying asleep. Yet we are not to understand from this that the entire cord goes out of the body; only the third part, composed of mental substance, does this, for it is the elastic segment of the cord. This sensitive cord carries impulses from the sleeping body to the wandering Spirit, calling it back in times of stress or danger.

As previously pointed out, the junction of the first two segments of the cord marks the quickening, at which time the incoming Ego is definitely and irrevocably committed to incarnation. The union of the second and third segments marks the birth of the adult, or the birth of the mind. New Age humanity is destined to experience a further development of this mystic cord, from the mental seed atom in the forehead to the physical seed atom in the heart. Its junction with the etheric segment in the heart will signalize the blending of the head and heart forces, understanding and love, into a golden spiritual fulcrum of soul wisdom. This fourth link or segment of the silver cord and its final welding into place in the heart heralds the new Initiate birth. Such was the new birth by spirit which the Master explained to Nicodemus "by night."

We have described the first three segments of the cord as composed of etheric, astral, and mental substance. The

student will now observe that the growth of the cord is correlative to the development of the four ethers of the body; the first three ethers are matured in the three septenary periods prior to adulthood. At twenty-one the Reflecting Ether is organized sufficiently to serve as the basis of adult consciousness, but it is not fully matured until the age of twenty-eight—which is, therefore, one of the turning-points of the life cycle of a human being. The fourth segment of the silver cord, an acquisition of the new race, will consist of Reflecting Ether; its juncture with the seed atom of the heart will open to the conscious mind all memories of past conditions of evolution, both on the inner and outer planes—that is, all incarnations and their celestial interludes.

That esoteric Masons such as Albert Pike understood the far-reaching and beautiful meaning of the silver cord is evidenced by the importance given to the twelfth chapter of Ecclesiastes in Masonic rituals. This chapter is a vivid and definite teaching of the initiatory Rite of Resurrection and Immortality. In the symbolism of this rite the golden bowl is the brain, the fountain is the heart—the two vital centers connected by the fourth part of the silver cord in the body of the Illumined. The pitcher is that great vein (avenue of transmuted light essence) which carries blood to the right ventricle of the heart (fountain). The cistern is the great artery which receives the blood (now a transmuted light essence) from the left ventricle of the heart. The wheel is descriptive of the radiant, luminous center of light which the heart becomes in the body of such an Initiate (Son of Wisdom).

#### THE SILVER CORD AND CREMATION

The foetus is purely vegetative in its activities. After birth, animalistic energies are manifest. Later, with adolescence and adulthood, intelligence is born, followed by the crowning of the life with the light of spirituality.

The Ego is linked to its chain of vehicles, as pre-



viously described, by the silver cord. So long as this cord is unsevered the Ego can feel the effects of post mortems, embalming, and cremation. It remains intact for about three and one-half days after death.

In the new science of death, wherein man will be taught how to care for those who are making the Great Transition, we shall come to understand that the greatest service we can render our departing loved ones is not grief and lamentation but silence and prayer. There is an interval, varying in length of time, immediately following the cessation of heart-beats during which the silver cord is unbroken. The Ego floats in a dreamy condition above its physical shell, still attached thereto by the cord and still able to feel everything done to that shell. In this semi-conscious period the Ego is reviewing its previous life in the body, and its whole attention needs to be concentrated upon this review. Because it is outside the dense body, the records in the negative pole of the Reflecting Ether are now visible to it; the life just ended unrolls like moving pictures before its gaze. Any condition which distracts the Ego from this recapitulatory panorama lessens the benefit received from it.

One of the Masters has thus spoken of this sacred interval of silence and preparation for the new and larger life: "Tread softly while the record of the present is being inscribed upon the veils of the future." The average period required for the recapitulation is not more than three and one-half days. Although very many Egos awaken sooner, the full three and one-half days should be allowed, since only a trained clairvoyant could know for certain if the Ego were awake earlier. At the end of the three-day period the funeral may be held and the body disposed of in whatever way is deemed best; the Ego is then free to go into higher realms of being.

Unless the Ego is sufficiently advanced to be able to sever at once all contacts with the physical world, when the silver cord breaks at the end of the recapitulatory period, there is always an "earth pull" which hinders ad-

justment to the new life in spirit. Cremation helps to free such Egos from their interest in the earth, for when the body is disintegrated they feel that their last hold on the physical plane is gone. Hence, the occult scientist generally prefers cremation to burial.

#### EVIDENCE OF THE CONTINUITY OF LIFE

*“When thou, clay cottage, fallest, I’ll immerse  
My long cramped spirit in the universe.”*

As humanity approaches the borderline of the Aquarian Age the veil between the seen and the unseen becomes more and more tenuous. Ever increasing numbers are learning the true significance of that triumphant declaration of Paul: “O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?”

Wars have been aptly termed by Max Heindel, as operations for the removal of spiritual cataract. Through nerve tension, sorrow, and fear the ethers part for many hitherto unseeing eyes, and the forms of beloved “dead” are plainly discernible.

During such times of travail, and for several years following, many of the “best sellers” have for their theme some aspect of transition from this plane to the next and communication between the living and the so-called dead. Judge Hatch’s *Letters of a Living Dead Man*, transmitted through Elsa Barker, and Sir Oliver Lodge’s communications from his son, Raymond, in the volume titled so simply *Raymond*, are products of World War I. Among the most arresting so far produced by World War II are *Many Mansions* by Gina Cerminara and *Lychgate* by Lord Dowding, England’s Air Chief Marshal. He relates numerous experiences with members of his forces who made the great sacrifice and whom he contacted after their death. He tells of helping them to adjust themselves to their new surroundings, and how many of them continued to aid

their brother airmen who remained in physical bodies on this side of the curtain of death.

With the ending of hostilities, Lord Dowding took to the lecture platform and through all the length and breadth of England he bore the greatest of all messages for the solace of the sorrowing: "There is no death." This same banner of hope and consolation was borne aloft after World War I by the eminent author of the Sherlock Holmes stories, Sir Arthur Conan Doyle.

Thus good comes out of evil—in war as in all else, for out of it came and continues to come the divine compensation of firsthand knowledge.

The question of the continuity of life has always been of paramount interest to the human mind. Cicero, the famed Roman historian, recounts the following: Two friends started upon a journey together and, upon entering a certain city, they went to an inn to engage rooms. The place being crowded, one of the men took lodging in a private house not far away. During the night this man was awakened by the voice of his friend who had remained at the inn, calling for his help. Dismissing the thought as merely foolish fancy, he again fell asleep. Once again the friend called him, and this time appeared before him, saying, "I have been murdered and my body has been hidden in a cart in the field." The next day the friend's story was verified and the body discovered in the place described.

Manifold are the latent powers within man awaiting unfoldment. In time we shall evolve the "blessed eyes" and the "blessed ears" whereby we may see and hear that our beloved ones have never died, that they are "nearer than breathing, closer than hands and feet."

There are those who yet continue to inhabit garments of flesh but who have already experienced the Great Transition commonly termed death. Those who have known this experience realize how slight is the change that occurs in the time of passing. The difference between "here" and "there" is largely a matter of vibration. The casting

aside of the sheath whose work is done may be compared to the shimmering cadences of music that sift through the air at sunset time. The Ego knows no agony of separation, but only relief indescribable and an added vibrancy, a lightness of spirit that seems to breathe the fragrance of infinite vistas and ever-expanding horizons.

There comes an indefinable feeling of oneness, a great, divine upsweeping tide of unity which seems to pervade and harmonize all that lives on all planes of manifestation. All the rhythms are singing a joyous paean of life, not death; of beginning, not ending; of bliss superlative, not sorrow. One who has known this experience can truly chant triumphantly, "O, grave, where is thy victory?"

The knowledge of occult scientists relative to inner-plane truths is continually finding verification in the discoveries of material science, as evidenced in a recent interview with a noted British scientist, Sir Edward Fish, one of the world's experts on wireless who conducted research with Marconi. He stated that he sees no reason why it will not soon be possible for the living to communicate by wireless with the dead. He asserts that it is all a matter of vibration: "Everything in our consciousness is the result of different vibrations and all matter is made from electricity. Because of this, the development of radio science might allow us to get in touch with the dead. Today we can contact only the material. It is not so fantastic to contemplate a time when radio communication will be advanced to a stage where we can contact the spiritual." "Research will have to discover," he adds, "the range of frequencies used by the dead; then there is also the problem of discovering a nexus, the borderline between spirit and matter."

The occult scientist has always affirmed the uncharted powers resident within the two higher ethers, the Light and Reflecting Ethers. When the implements of material science become sufficiently sensitive to contact these higher forces there will be no further barrier between us and the "dead." The actual discovery of immortality

will have become an established and immutable fact, scientifically demonstrable in terms of our everyday consciousness.

#### THE MINISTRY OF INVISIBLE HELPERS

*The soul soars upward on its journey through the night,  
With every sense wide open,  
That it may catch the beauty and the power,  
The wisdom and the love of higher realms,  
And then with fresh renewing of its powers,  
It seeks its earthly home, the tenement of flesh,  
And through the wakeful hours of sun-crowned day  
It weaves the vision of the night on earthly looms, . . .  
That man may step by step  
Attain the promise of the spheres.*

— *Luise B. Brownell*

The consciousness of the average individual is limited at present to his waking hours, during which time he takes note of and functions in the outer objective world by means of his five physical senses. Man possesses in latency, however, numerous other faculties which belong to his inner finer, invisible vehicles. Each thought, word, and deed of daily life sets its seal upon sleeping centers, either sensitizing them or drugging them into greater insensibility. Meat, alcohol, and tobacco produce a marked effect in dulling and deadening these higher centers of contact. Concentration and meditation upon high and holy things are potent techniques for their awakening.

The first important step is the establishment of a certain rhythm within the body, the purpose of music in initiatory Temples. Early Church music served this same purpose of attuning worshippers to the rhythms of the Christian Mystery Temple. Gradually the chasm in memory between day and night is bridged.

It is always night in some parts of the world; hence, there is always a time and place for the ministrations of

Invisible Helpers. In hospitals, homes where death has entered, riots, wars, fires, floods, the entombment of miners and at scenes of various natural catastrophes, the harvest for service is always white and the laborers few.

Another important field open to Invisible Helpers is that of influencing the minds of world leaders and those who are in charge of governments. Much work along this line was done during World Wars I and II which prevented even greater chaos and confusion than was experienced. If workers can only surround key figures with an atmosphere of calm and confidence in a time of crisis, instilling in them an incentive for serving the highest good of all concerned, the Powers of Darkness will have been weakened and the Forces of Light correspondingly strengthened. Of such service the Psalmist testifies: "He giveth his gifts to his loved ones as they sleep."

The work of Invisible Helpers is invaluable in assisting the newly deceased to make proper adjustment to inner-plane conditions. Helpers also instruct newcomers on the other side to protect themselves from the swirling psychic currents of the lower Desire World, the purgatorial realms.

Disembodied Egos oftentimes express gratitude to loved ones still upon earth for having been freed by cremation instead of through the longer process of disintegration, despite their opposition to the idea of cremation during life in the body. However, as already stated, it is not good that a body be cremated within three days after death. This is according to the ancient Hebrew tradition as indicated in the *Apocrypha*, where we read that Adam's body was not buried until three days after his passing. In Sir Oliver Lodge's *Raymond*, a time limit of seven days is suggested during which cremation should not be performed, for in many cases the Spirit is still within the body or attached to it for some time after death. Raymond tells of a man who was to be cremated two days after death, and in whom the silver cord was yet actually intact. Raymond did not understand this situation, but the occultist would say that in such an instance the man was really not dead at

all and might have been resuscitated had proper means been taken. Since the cremation was set to be carried out, "spirit doctors" arrived to break this connection of the silver cord with the body and to assist the Spirit before cremation, thus sparing it much suffering, Raymond reported.

The Ego relinquishes its dense body at physical death, rises in its etheric envelope, and relinquishes that to rise into the astral. After the experiences of Purgatory and Heaven, it relinquishes its astral sheath to rise into the mental realm called the Second Heaven. This is the home of the average Ego, who has little of that abstract mentality requisite to rising into the sublime reaches of the Third Heaven, which may well be designated the "heaven of the sages."

In the Second Heaven the Ego remains for many centuries, working in full consciousness and preparing for its own future periods of evolution in time and space. All of this work is done mentally, for here "thoughts are things" and the thought forms generated are archetypes which create the outer world.

Evil souls, however long confined to purgatorial realms, eventually cast off their astral shells and ascend into heaven worlds; but their cast-off shells continue to float about on the psychic currents of Purgatory and are sometimes inhabited temporarily by evil, newly discarnate entities, or by elemental spirits of subhuman evolutions who roam about deluding credulous psychics and even innocent persons who have left the body in sleep or death. An important task of the Invisible Helpers is to invoke astral fire to consume these shells, for there is a fire of the soul which is just as real as any fire we know on earth, and that fire is an agent of purification in the hands of Invisible Helpers.

The hours of night are mystic and occult hours, the time always associated with fantasies and dreams. It is during night time that the words of the poet come true when he says that "the dream and the dreamer are one."

The subtle and mysterious forces of Cancer, the sign which governs night, together with her planet, the Moon, the great night star, hold sway during the hours of darkness.

During these magic hours the Spirit is free and untrammelled by the flesh; free to roam through earth and air at will; free to soothe and serve wheresoever there is need; free also to drink of the mystic waters of life to which the Master so often referred, those Eternal Waters that spring from the fount of Cancer, the great Mother. Those who learn to partake of these living waters shall never thirst again, declared the Master.

It is before the mighty Cherubim—the Hierarchy of Cancer — that the consecrated Invisible Helper makes his supreme dedication. He goes out nightly, joyous in his mission, in the spirit of that beautiful prayer given by the Rosierucian School: “Tonight while our physical bodies are peacefully resting in sleep, may we, as Invisible Helpers, still be found faithfully working in the vineyard of Christ, for as Spirits we need no rest.”

#### SLEEP, INITIATION, AND DEATH

*At the hour of death, the Wise One with mind fixed upon Me, goeth straight to Me without doubts or mischance. But he who fasteneth his desires upon aught else, if there be to him a greater God, material or otherwise, than Me, to that God of materiality goeth that man. Each goeth to that which is his Ruling Passion—strong even in death.*

—*Bhagavad Gita*

Sleep, death, and Initiation are but varying manifestations of life. The principal difference between the living and the so-called dead is that the latter no longer possess a physical body and its corresponding etheric or vital envelope. The Ego, sheathed in the remainder of its vehicles, remains intact. Hence it is that feeling, knowledge, and perception are doubly sensitized, for the desire and mental



bodies are undisturbed in their functionings. Only the physical, which acted as an incubator for these higher bodies, has been removed. Therefore, the love and understanding of our beloved "dead," instead of decreasing, is enormously magnified.

Because the Ego still remains in possession of the same desire and mental vehicles, its desire and thoughts undergo little change at the transition from "life" to "death." The act of passing from the visible into the invisible does not transform a sinner into a saint. Habit and inclination attract one to congenial Spirits "over there" exactly the same as here. In both realms are various degrees and forms of activity to which one may be attracted, high and low. The inner worlds are planes of ceaseless activity. Each new arrival soon finds his own place and sphere, whatever it may be.

The surroundings and environment of children are most wonderful and beautiful. Innerplane substance is highly amenable to the power of thought, and lessons are given to children which deal largely with the constructive use of the imagination. They learn how to remake their lives, their bodies, and their environment by thought power. Their games are all symbolic of soul growth and they are taught to endow their toys with life. The Disney productions are somewhat similar in their appeal and educational value to inner-plane instruction. Especially applicable to the state of children in the heaven-world are the lines of the poet:

*I am gone before your face,  
A moment's worth, a little space,  
When ye come where I have stepped  
Ye will wonder why ye wept.*

Sleep and death have been termed "twin brothers" by Greek poets. This is because the processes are similar. In sleep the Ego leaves the physical and etheric bodies behind, taking with it the desire and mental bodies. It is the possession and use of these two latter vehicles that give

clear pictures and vivid memory to dreams. The role of the etheric body during sleep is that of refreshing and resuscitating the physical.

In the final process of death the physical no longer needs refreshment, so the etheric is also withdrawn, thus leaving the physical body motionless, inert. Having finished its work, it is ready to be reabsorbed into the elements from which it came.

When the Ego goes out in sleep there is usually a brief period of unconsciousness before the varied activities of the "night life" begin. In death also, there is generally an interval of unconsciousness before the newly "dead" is adjusted to conditions of a new life and environment. During this interval the recently released Spirit is sensitive to impacts from both the objective and subjective realms, hence the importance of surrounding our departed ones with love, prayer thoughts of upliftment, and God's speed into the new life. This will be an inestimable blessing and of such benefit that it will go far toward liquidating unfinished karma between the individuals for whom and by whom this service is rendered.

A mystic has thus aptly described the intimate relationship between sleep and death: "Death is the great Initiation of which sleep is but the minor mystery."

#### INITIATION

Occult scientists comprehend something of the nature and functions of man's fourfold body—physical, etheric, desire, and mental vehicles. While treating them separately, it must be remembered that they function as a unit under the direction of the indwelling Ego. In sleep there is a division between the physical-etheric and astral-mental, as previously described. A similar division takes place in death, but here the division is between the physical body and the other three sheaths, the etheric sheath also separating from the physical body of which it is the matrix and double.

There is yet another division which occurs in the case

of Initiation. For the vast majority intervals of sleep are mere periods of unconsciousness. This is due to the fact that their astral and mental sheaths are entirely unorganized and untrained. In order to be awake and alert when out of the body, a long and arduous preparation is necessary, prefaced and accompanied by high thinking and pure living. First, certain perceptive centers must be developed in the higher vehicles—centers possessed by everyone but usually in a crude form, mere “sensitive spots” in the aura. In time these “sensitive spots” will develop into eyes of the soul, just as “sensitive spots” in the heads of those pre-human creatures which became man developed into physical eyes. However, the eyes of the soul will not become localized as are bodily organs of vision, but will be coextensive with the soul body itself. Other senses will be similarly distributed throughout that organism. The consciousness which ensouls this all-seeing, all-feeling, all-hearing, and all-knowing body is beyond the grasp of our present powers of imagination.

Following the development of perceptive centers which confer full super-physical sight upon an Initiate, a cleavage is effected between the higher and lower aspects of the desire body and between the higher and lower aspects of the etheric body. The lower part of the desire body is the “animal soul;” it consists of desire stuff drawn from lower regions of the Desire World, avenue of all sensual feeling. This animal soul must be laid aside as the first step toward Initiation—which means embracing a disciplined spiritual life.

Cleavage between the two higher and two lower ethers is more difficult to bring about. In oriental schools this work is not generally countenanced, attention being centered upon astral and mental substance. It must be noted, therefore, that the cleavage which takes place is not within the etheric double proper—which, strictly speaking, consists primarily of Chemical and Life Ethers—but between the double and the two higher ethers which, as we have said, still are unorganized and formless in the average

individual. Before the cleavage can take place, this formless substance must become formed, the unorganized higher ethers must be organized. This is done through meditation and contemplation. As music is known to produce certain geometric patterns, so particular modes of meditation produce definite patterns in the Light and Reflecting Ethers. The pattern among Christians is generally called The Star or the Christ Star. When that Star shines in an aura a Teacher appears, as the Magi came to the infant Jesus at the shining of His Star. This Star is formed in the two higher ethers, but the esoteric work involved cannot be disclosed publicly as it endangers health if improperly done. It leads to Initiation by severing higher ethers from lower. None need fear that he will be overlooked by the Teachers. They cannot fail to see the Star when it shines in the inner world, and they come from far places, for the Star indicates to them that another "Little One" awaits their holy ministrations.

By concentration of mental forces, by their right use in meditation, together with "living the life," spiritual organs of perception are developed in the higher vehicles and the Star shines forth. One who lives almost entirely in this "upper atmosphere" will experience no unconsciousness either in death or sleep. Said Hermes, the great Egyptian Master, "Happy is he whose vices die before him. In such a one the vital body dissolves like a silver cloud and the spirit moves on into the High, the Beautiful, and the True."

Initiation is the highest achievement of our present human evolution and will form the chief cornerstone of the religion of Aquaria. It is described by Nellie Burget Miller simply and directly as "a stage in the soul's journey from the darkness of the material realms into the light of spiritual consciousness." Only by means of the expansion of vision gained through Initiation, can the oneness of all life be fully comprehended and true meaning of brotherhood realized. Hence, it is the most vital factor in the life of man and in the enlightenment of the age.

## Chapter VIII

### ***The Blood—An Arcane Mystery***

*The fruit is man regenerated by the oil and wine,  
by the Flesh and Blood of Christ.—Paracelsus.*

#### EARLY DEVELOPMENT

The blood is one of the most baffling of many mysteries connected with the human body. We know that it is the principal factor in body building from the time of conception until "the silver cord is loosed and the spirit returned unto God who gave it."

In common with all other vehicles of individualized Spirit, the peculiar essence called blood has undergone tremendous changes in its evolutionary career. Nor have these ceased. Even greater changes will take place in the future as man's body gradually outgrows its material expression and puts on immortality. So we must consider the blood as it was constituted in the past, as it is conditioned at present, and as its transmuted state will be in the future.

Within the Earth is stored all the elements to be found in our human organism, including those which constitute the blood. In the very early stages of our earthly evolution, our blood was not red as it is today, but was a white ethereal substance similar to the milky juices of certain plants which are evolutionary relics of that time.

During this period man existed in an etheric condition. His body (if such it can be called) was attached to the etheric envelope of the Earth as an unborn babe is attached to the placenta in the uterus by means of the umbilical cord. During this period—which one may rightly consider a prelude to evolution—the etheric currents of the Earth circulated through etheric embryos suspended in its atmosphere. Occultists call these etheric currents "the Milk of Nature." They still exist in the etheric envelope of our

globe and still circulate in and about and through us, but with a difference. When our body organism became definitely physical, the etheric currents specialized within it crystallized into the "mysterious essence" we call blood. This circulates through the human body as the mother-currents circulate through the etheric body of the Earth, whereas magnetic Earth currents now enter our etheric double only. Therefore, in a very special sense the blood is a product of the vital body. It is rich in the life ether which is the primordial Milk of Nature, but its red color is due to another evolutionary innovation which took place at a very early period.

After the Lords of Forms (celestial Beings represented by the constellation Scorpio), assisted by others, had fashioned bodies into something of their present form, the fiery Angels of Mars depolarized the iron in the Earth; and also in the blood stream of human bodies. By means of this Egos could produce internal heat and awaken to a realization of their selfhood. Man's awakening to himself as an Ego was roughly coincident with his being cut off from the nourishing Earth currents. Certain corresponding elements in the blood were then dissolved, and human consciousness became dimly aware of an egoic self, the "I." Blood then became red due to the presence of iron, and with the development of red blood a new creature was born upon the Earth. According to Moses, "the life of the flesh is in the blood." The Law of Moses contains many significant precepts relative to the blood which cannot be fully understood apart from their occult interpretation.

The flowing of sacrificial blood was a mystic part of the earliest forms of religious ritual. To the people of that period this was not the cruelty it is for us today. A human being was greatly advanced in his evolution when his death was accompanied by the flowing of blood, and this he knew intuitively. Moreover, the sacrificial victim understood that his blood flowed back into the great magnetic reservoir of the Earth and continued circulating through

the people for whom he voluntarily surrendered his body. He thus entered into the sacrifice in a willing spirit and would gain enormously thereby. He was certain, too, of immediate rebirth. And he could sense angelic Beings of the heaven worlds, so did not feel frightened or alone.

In modern times the accumulated evils of races are precipitated in wars where blood is shed on a vast scale, thus accomplishing the same purpose as blood sacrifices in primitive religions. We cannot hope to avoid such social upheavals and global blood-letting until we purify our minds and emotions and "die daily" by means of voluntary love offerings in a spirit of true fellowship.

The circulatory system displays the celestial wisdom and the aeons of evolution behind it. If all flesh and bone were removed from a body, leaving the blood vessels only, there would still remain the outline of a human figure. The blood circulates through arteries and veins, the arteries carrying pure oxygenated blood from the lungs to every part of the body, refreshing and nourishing it. The veins carry devitalized blood with its impurities back to the heart and lungs for cleansing. Astrologically, arterial blood is ruled by Jupiter and venous blood by Venus. The task of blood purification is truly a labor of love to be performed by the Goddess (Angel) of Love.

The blood is continuously supplying the body with an infusion of oxygen and taking away waste in the form of carbonic gas. Oxygen is body fuel; carbonic acid is its ash or waste.

In addition to the veins and arteries, blood circulates through tiny threadlike capillaries which must be studied with the aid of a microscope. These capillaries form a fine network over every part of the body, penetrating into bone, muscle, skin, and brain. It is via the capillaries that the blood passes its food essence into body tissues by a process called *osmosis*. One of the most important functions of heart and arteries is to keep a balanced supply of pure food and oxygen continuously passing into the capillaries to maintain the body in good health that it may be an ade-

quate and responsive instrument for giving expression to the creative energies of spirit.

The red globules in the blood attract oxygen, and it is these which give the blood its red color. The watery part of the blood in which the globules float is the plasma. This contains substance in dissolution, some of which is retained by the body while the rest is carried away as refuse.

Without the work of oxygenation, the Ego could not occupy a body at all, for it is through absorption of oxygen that the blood is renewed. When blood containing the accumulated poisons of the body flows through the lungs and there contacts oxygen, a process of combustion takes place whereby the poisons are removed and the blood charged with new life.

As previously stated, the blood is the medium through which the inner man—the Ego, the I-identity—rules his body in our present state of evolution. To some extent hypnotists and spirit controls push the higher vehicles out of the physical body and incorporate a part of their own desire and mental vehicles into the body of a person so controlled. This has a tendency to nucleate and liquefy the blood, for nuclei in the blood furnish a vantage point for the operations of outside entities and the liquefaction of the blood makes it less amenable to the control of the indwelling Ego. It is also to be noted that an important work of Initiation concerns the transmuting of the Saturnian skeleton into the Jupiterian body, and any interference with the blood hinders this process since red cells of the blood are actually manufactured in the marrow bones of the skeleton.

The esotericist goes a step farther and adds that the blood assists in the alchemy of spiritualizing the skeleton. When studied clairvoyantly within the body, etheric blood is seen as a refined, vibrating light essence. The higher the attainment of the individual, the more rarefied and luminous becomes his blood. Early church legends about saints whose blood became white refer to this high state



of spirituality, wherein the body becomes radiant by reason of this effulgence.

Every aspirant to inner knowledge must begin his work by purification of the blood. For this reason he learns to sustain his body with a pure and harmless diet, eliminating all food procured at the cost of pain and suffering to animals. He guards his every thought, word and deed, for he learns that his life and environment are pictured in his blood, and that his life is fashioned subconsciously in accordance with these pictures. The misuse of the creative force within man's body, his use of improper foods, and impurity in thought and speech tend to thicken the blood. Man of the coming Age and race will not inhabit so dense and inert a vehicle as he has to work through at the present time. As previously stated, the blood assists in the alchemy of spiritualization and, together with the desire body, in the process of re-creation. According to the divine pattern, man must come to "walk in the Light as He is in the Light." The Supreme Teacher said that only the pure in heart shall enter the Kingdom.

The occult scientist also states that red blood has a particular correlation to a well-developed desire body. The evolution of the desire body began in the Third Creative Day (Moon Period). At this time the circulatory life essence, later to become blood, also made its initial appearance. This essence was white, and it was upon this peculiarly sensitive desire-stuff that the Lucifers began to concentrate their influence by use of the vibratory red ray. This has always been the color used to stimulate desires and to incite passion in both animal and man. It is so used by the Black Magician in serving his own purposes.

In the animal kingdom only vertebrates have red blood, for it is a necessary accompaniment of an individual desire body. The seed atom of the desire body does not come under the control of the Ego until the Ego has learned to manufacture red corpuscles. These little bodies (round in human blood) are about 1-3200 of an inch in diameter. They compose about half the blood content and their office is to

attract oxygen through the Fire Forces of Earth and Sun.

White corpuscles are germ centers and owe their origin to destructive or negative thinking. There is only one of these to approximately six hundred red corpuscles. In this we have another example of the love and care of those Great Beings who are aiding us to build bodies that will eventually win immortality.

The red corpuscles of animals contain a nucleated point not found in human blood. This is the center through which the Group Spirit controls its species. During that portion of the prenatal period when the mother's influence is most active, the blood of an infant is also nucleated. This nucleated center disappears at the time of quickening, after which the Ego becomes the controller of its own body. In involuntary mediumship and cases of extreme and prolonged obsession, the blood shows a tendency to become gradually nucleated.

The custom of family intermarriage was for the purpose of making the blood tie between Egos as potent as possible. The similarity of family characteristics and customs kept the blood in approximately the same rhythm, making it easier to impress pictures of ancestral life upon the subconscious mind with the least inaccuracy or distortion. Each succeeding generation thus lived as much in the past as in the present. In this manner family, and later, tribal instincts were fostered, Egos becoming increasingly amenable to Race Spirit influence.

International marriage is the great corrective for racial egotism. It tends to break down barriers of race, habit, and custom, all of which have a crystallizing effect upon the blood. One of the beneficial results of World War II will be expansion of universality through international marriage.

At the present time the blood of each individual contains only the pictures of his own personal experiences, and his subconscious mind has access to them. Up to the time that marriage outside of the family was initiated, individuals were ruled by a family spirit (Angel) which

entered the body by means of the air and inspired and helped each Ego to control its vehicles. When marriage outside the family began, Egos had arrived at a point in the self-conscious evolution where they could begin to depend on self, where they were to cease being God-guided automatons and become self-governing individuals. The greater the mixture of blood, the less the indwelling Ego can be influenced by the race or family spirit. Unmixed blood gave us ancestral assistance when it was needed. Mixed blood makes for independence of outside help. The evolving god within must be independent.

Everything in man's environment (the objective world) is pictured in the blood, and subconsciously man fashions his life according to these pictures; that is the reason why familiarity with vice makes one tolerant of it. In primitive man, introspection was very strong. Instead of relying upon his own judgment when he was called upon to meet emergencies, he immediately resorted to the ancestral pictures in his blood and acted according to the collective experience of his tribe.

Unmixed blood expressed the power of ancestral life; mixed blood expresses the power of personal experience, for experiences of former lives express themselves as mental faculties. Unmixed blood and introspection give negative clairvoyance; mixed blood makes positive clairvoyance possible of attainment. When one is taken violently out of the body, the impurities of the lower nature, carried by the venous blood, cling to the Ego. If at this time the blood flows, a distinct cleansing is sensed by the Ego.

The blood and the two nervous systems, the sympathetic and cerebro-spinal, are intimately associated in their esoteric functions. The sympathetic system is the special field of action of the subconscious mind. When egoic consciousness is focussed there it perceives the outer world as pictured in the blood, by means of primitive clairvoyance. Through the agency of this inner picture—consciousness, focused through the subconscious mind—man originally built his body with its internal organs. The Ego

was not then *in* the body, but it held the body image within its consciousness. It is this ancient ancestral picture-consciousness which has since sunk below the threshold of our waking mind and now constitutes the subconscious mind, as it is known to modern psychology. While the Egoic consciousness was turned inward, man was necessarily unaware of the outer world. All he knew of it was what he saw in the reflecting ether of his own blood stream.

Red blood corpuscles are first formed in the marrow of the bones. In early Lemuria, the "coats of skin" into which man descended were a soft, cartilage-like body. The hard bony framework of the present physical body belonged to a much later stage of evolution.

It was part of the work of the Third Creative Day to organize the planets (then existing in an etheric condition only) so they might be separated from the central Sun at the dawn of the Earth Period. The separation of Mars reduced its influence over the iron in the Earth; and when the planetary Spirit of Mars finally withdrew its influence completely, that metal became available for use by nascent humanity as soon as its evolution permitted. Its use became quite marked in the latter portion of the Lemurian Epoch, when red blood developed.

The solar iron was not wholly identical in nature with iron as we know it today. It differed just as the elements which astronomers detect in the Sun are not identical in condition with the same elements found upon Earth. There was a still greater difference in that early period.

To the occultist, iron and oxygen are the basic fiery elements essential to the highly individualized blood of our present civilization. Behind this blood stretches a long and involved history through many ages and lands, under the aegis of a great and varied host of celestial Intelligences, among which the solar and martian influences predominated. Iron is the basis of all separate existence or individualization, through the manufacture of red blood. Oxygen is the basis of the delicately balanced organs through which the aerated blood operates. It is considered

a solar element by occultists due to its special connection with certain little-known activities in "invisible sunlight." Thus, at the present time the "heat of the blood is the vantage ground of the Ego, and the Lucifer spirits from Mars dissolve iron in the blood to attract oxygen, a solar element."

#### PRESENT CONSTITUTION OF THE BLOOD

*The Ego controls the dense body by means of the blood, which is its particular vehicle.*

—Max Heindel

The blood is formed by the mesoderm layer of the ovum and is correlated, as previously noted, with the work of the Third Creative Day (Moon Period) where it had its inception. Blood vessels proper appear correspondingly late in an embryo.

Up to approximately the fifteenth year a child's red marrow does not make all the red corpuscles. Most of them are supplied from the thymus gland, which is the largest gland in a foetus but gradually diminishes as the blood-making ability develops in the growing child. The thymus gland contains a supply of red blood corpuscles given by the child's parent. So long as he draws blood from that source, he does not realize his own individuality.

A very young child cannot make its own red corpuscles because its desire body is not sufficiently developed to act as an avenue for the Martian forces which promote assimilation of iron from the blood and its transmission into haemoglobin. To compensate for this lack, there is stored in the thymus gland a spiritual essence, provided by the parents, which enables the child to accomplish the alchemy of blood processes until its desire body matures and becomes active. When the thymus gland atrophies, usually near puberty, the child draws from its own desire body the necessary martial force with which to manufacture its own blood corpuscles.

The creative life force, which later manifests as sex, begins to be stored in the blood between the ages of seven and fourteen. These are most important and crucial years in the life of a child, for this great force can later become a consuming fire or it can be transmuted into dynamic soul power and soul light. Advanced Egos usually show definite signs of marked growth between the ages of seven and fourteen, thus evidencing work in previous lives with the spiritualization of this life essence.

Great sages of all ages have been unanimous in their declarations concerning the occult significance of the blood. Empedocles, in 480 B. C., stated that the "blood is life." Goethe, with true Initiate knowledge, put similar words into the mouth of Faust when, having made an incision in his hand, he watched the blood flow. "O, man! thus escapes man's liquid fire."

The Bible, vast treasury of occult lore that it is, contains numerous references to the profound mystic significance of the blood. For example: "And the priests shall sprinkle the blood upon the altar of the Lord at the door of the tabernacle of the congregation, and burn the fat for a sweet savour unto the Lord. And they shall no more offer their sacrifice unto devils, after whom they have gone a whoring. This shall be a statute for ever unto them throughout their generations . . . For the life of the flesh is in the blood: and I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for the souls" (Leviticus 17: 6, 7, 11).

The "sacrifice of devils" has reference to evil practices common among those skilled in secret arts at the time the records were written. Since *the blood is life itself*, it holds a power that can be used for good or evil. On the occasion of the Last Supper and when passing the cup or holy grail, the Master taught its sacred use: "This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you." Also, "I will not drink of the fruit of the vine until the kingdom of God shall come."

*Leviticus* contains much hidden teaching in relation

to the occult significance of the blood. The origin of the Covenant of the Blood dates back to the Lemurian Race. Its first mystic ceremonial was observed at the time of the separation of the sexes into male and female forms; at this time there was a "fall" in the substance and texture of blood. The Blood Rite commemorated the change from the androgynous state of man's being into the dual sex state of the present time. This Rite was a part of the ceremonial of the earliest Mystery Temple teachings.

After puberty the thyroid gland becomes the body's blood arbiter. This minute gland, situated in the throat, regulates the blood rhythms of the body. Esoterically, this small organ is the link between the lower and higher self (personality and Spirit). The causes underlying many baffling maladies will some day find their true diagnosis in this fact. William Harvey, who in 1628 first discovered and publicized the truth about blood circulation, gave as a general diagnosis of all disease: "Health means a free circulation. Disease means an impeded circulation." The illumined healer of the future will study circulatory rhythms of the blood relative to the soul growth and the moral and spiritual development of the patient. Initial soul rhythms which govern blood circulation have their origin in the heart, and this organ will ultimately become the chief light of the body, both physically and spiritually.

The straggler Angel, Lucifer, really signifies temptation by means of heat in the blood. The liver is the seat of the desire body. *Lived* spelled backwards is devil. For this reason Lucifer is often depicted in the red robe, horns, and tail of the traditional devil.

The Grecian legend of Prometheus bound to the rock with vultures gnawing at his liver is another illustration of the power of the desire nature (centered in the liver) to cause suffering.

So long as the skeleton was on the outside of the body, consciousness was centered in the sympathetic nervous system; but when the skeleton became embedded in the body, consciousness turned outward and became centered

in the cerebro-spinal nervous system. Desire currents then swept outward from the liver, and red blood turned the will of the Ego inward upon itself, while his vision focused without.

The human Ego has now evolved to a much higher state and has learned to fashion its physical temple on a solid bony structure possessing semi-fluid red marrow. Red corpuscles, as previously noted, are supplied during prenatal life and in early childhood by the thymus gland and later they are manufactured in the red marrow of the bones. These minute red corpuscles of the human being are un-nucleated. Thus, they bear the signature of the Ego's attainment of individuality. They know no master save their own Ego. To be subjected to the power of an alien (as in hypnotism and obsession) is one of the most terrible of fates, and demands the heaviest of all punishments for the offending agent.

The physical work of these red corpuscles—which are circular in shape and so flexible that they fold together and pass through almost infinitesimal openings—is to carry oxygen from the lungs and to distribute it to all parts of the body. This they can do because iron attracts oxygen.

Lymph is blood plasma which passes through the walls of the capillaries. It bathes cells and carries away that which they do not need, then joins the great drainage system whereby blood is returned to the heart. Lymph has its own circulatory system which begins with minute capillaries into which it passes by filtration. These capillaries unite into larger vessels termed lymphatics and empty into veins that unite to form the *vena cava*.

There are seven hundred lymph-nodes situated in various parts of the body. These vary from the size of a pin-head to that of an olive seed. They may be termed the policemen of the body for they are on continuous guard duty to keep the human organism free from all forms of harmful bacteria.

The blood must infuse several billion body cells twice a minute throughout physical existence. The arteries which



carry blood from the heart contract and expand with its every beat. It is estimated that in fifty years the arteries have contracted and expanded three billion times.

The great aorta is an inch in diameter. This divides into innumerable branches, ultimating in capillaries so minute that thousands of them are required to contain the blood of the aorta.

In the spleen are manufactured the white corpuscles. From there they gain direct entry into the blood, the normal proportion between white and red corpuscles being one white to about six hundred red. These white corpuscles are created when the desire body has gained influence over certain organs belonging to the etheric double, of which the spleen is one. Hence, the more a person yields to violent emotions the more rapid is the increase of white corpuscles in his body. The physical danger is that an excess of white corpuscles may interfere with the oxygen and iron supply of the blood (haemoglobin) with anemia or leukemia as a result. Psychologically the danger is even greater. If an individual habitually gives way to anger or other forms of passion—in other words, if he loses control of himself—then these white corpuscles are liable to become nuclei in which outside elements can imbed themselves and open the way for spirit control and obsession. In the light of this knowledge Max Heindel spoke of the white blood corpuscles as “lost opportunities.”

The work of white blood corpuscles, science notes, is perhaps the most complicated process taking place within the human organism. A white corpuscle swallows a bacterium whole and then breaks it into bits in a way which parallels the digestive process in miniature. It then selects such elements as it requires (similar to absorption) and moves away or rejects those it does not require (analogous to excretion).

In recent experiments, a Philadelphia physician, Dr. Edmond J. Farris, has discovered that a change does take place in the blood stream during times of stress, fear, and excitement. In experimentation with sudden and unusual

noises the lymphocyte count (one of the white corpuscles) rose sharply. "Blood curdling," he declares, "is not fantasy, but fact."

In the coagulation of blood taken from a human body the highly individualized work of the Ego may be observed. In its coagulated state, the blood of every individual is seen to be different from that of every other person. Upon its minute particles are inscribed the "soul signature" of the Ego to whom it belongs. It has been said that every drop of blood contains a picture of all the past, and that in it the future is being prepared.

Science has made tremendous discoveries about "blood interpreting" in the past few decades. It is now possible to detect disease, racial characteristics, paternity and many other things. Later, blood analysis will be extended to include pictures of past lives and an outline of future events.

The blood registers every thought and emotion, for during every moment of waking, thinking or feeling, life is transmitted from the surrounding ethers to the lungs by breath, and there makes its impress upon the blood. It is an occult maxim that he who controls the blood controls the man. Herein is the basis of Mephistopheles' power over Faust. As the latter signed his name in his blood, he also signed away his prerogative of free-will, man's highest God-given right. The modern analogue of Goethe's famous drama is *The Devil and Daniel Webster*, given a screen production under the title *All That Money Can Buy*.

The blood is at present the most highly individualized factor in the human body. Man was assisted by hosts of celestial Beings in the building of every bodily organ; the blood alone is the product of his own individual labor. As already observed, when a child has dissolved nucleated blood furnished by his parent and has begun to manufacture his own blood, he begins to realize his individual and independent existence. He becomes "I," and the sacred mysteries of his own innermost being reveal themselves to him alone. The blood is the most complete ex-

pression of this "I." Its development, further individualization, purification, and eventual transmutation *are entirely dependent upon the will of the Ego*. In this fact is found the reason for the extreme caution necessary in the performance of blood transfusions.

## BLOOD TRANSFUSIONS

Medical Science has developed an elaborate system of blood typing to facilitate blood transfusion from one individual to another.

A transfusion usually produces a clotting of the red corpuscles, termed *agglutination*, due to the fact that the fluid part (serum) of one blood type contains a substance which reacts to something in the corpuscles of the other blood. There are two agglutinable substances designated as A and B, and four general blood types. Of these,

Group 1 contains neither A nor B; Group 2 contains A; Group 3 contains B; Group 4 contains A and B.

The serum agglutinates whichever of the substances the cells do not contain. Such agglutination will occur within twenty minutes or not at all. The blood of persons belonging to the same group are compatible. Extreme care must be taken that the blood of donor and recipient are not antagonistic.

The four blood groups are found to occur in different proportions in different races, corresponding to the four alchemical principles of Fire, Earth, Air, and Water, which mark the progression of every race and individual. All diseases and healers come under these same groupings and will eventually be so tabulated and classified.

Specialized blood pathology enumerates four principal groups which may be tabulated in this fourfold relationship:

1. Characteristic feature is change in haemoglobin, number of erythrocytes, diminution (anemia) or increase (trythemia). Air.
2. Leukocytes, leukemia, and leukopenia. Water.

3. Clotting mechanism (hemorrhages). Earth.
4. Parasites (malaria). Fire.

Blood transfusion always produces a karmic tie between donor and recipient. The "blood banks" established to meet present emergencies upon far-flung battlefields will have a powerful effect in dissolving barriers between races and nations and will tend toward the binding of all peoples into one vast fellowship under Christ Jesus.

After receiving several transfusions from the same individual many persons have evidenced characteristics similar to those of the donor. Certain donors, on the other hand, have had interesting contacts with individuals to whom they have given blood, at the time when the latter passed from the physical world.

All beings lower in the evolutionary scale than anthropoid apes will die if human blood is injected into their veins; they cannot endure its higher potencies. All animal blood is nucleated and, as before stated, these nuclei form the basis of control by the animal Group Spirit.

As humanity progresses in individualization the time will come when blood transfusion will no longer be possible. Initiates who earn their powers through lives of pure and self-sacrificial living will be the first to pass beyond the possibility of blood transfusion.

In the very nature of its work, the blood is an expression of the universality of spirit. It knows no limitation or divisional operations but gives itself freely and equally to all parts of the body. If it restricted itself, or withheld its flow from certain organs and gave preference to others, the entire body would soon manifest chaos and dissolution. Equality and Oneness are its operational keynotes.

## THE BLOOD — FUTURE DEVELOPMENT

### THE BLOOD IN REGENERATION

Generation is always associated with the shedding of blood; regeneration with the transmutation of blood. All

the world is enmeshed in the former but few as yet have any concept of the latter, although it is the central mystery of the secret teaching given by the Master to His Disciples at the Last Supper. He said, "This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

The blood is essentially a fire element and, as we have seen, it comes under the influence of Mars and the Sun—Mars representing the lower desire nature, and the Sun, the Spirit. The more spiritual a person becomes, the more etherealized is the blood. Material or negative thinking, heavy foods, alcohol, and indulgence of the sense life lower the vibratory rate of the body and liquefy the blood.

Medical science is just entering upon important discoveries in connection with blood crystals. The higher the individualization of a person, the more distinct are the patterns of his blood crystals. The time will come when not only secrets of heredity or concealed tendencies will be discoverable in the blood, but also lines of progression extending from past lives. Medical science will yet come to understand the occult verity that the blood is the seat or home of the Ego. Paracelsus declares that "The mere looking at externals is a matter for clowns, but the intuition of internals is a secret which belongs to physicians."

The red of Mars is slow to be changed into the golden transparency of the Sun. To lift and transmute the power of Mars is the work of our present evolution. Difficult indeed is the path and arduous the labor. "The path is so narrow," writes Esdras, "that leads unto this blessed place (of transmutation) that but one man can walk on the same; on one side is Fire and on the other is Water."

Only by high thinking and pure living may an aspirant to the holy Mysteries come to understand the process of changing blood *heat* into blood *light*. This the Christ taught Peter, James, and John on the Day of Transfiguration. It was also part of the initiatory process by which Elijah was translated into heaven in a chariot of fire and light.

Blood may be divided into three parts: serum, which comes under the astrological signature of Cancer; red matter, Scorpio; and fibrin, Pisces. This makes clear the meaning of Boehme's statement that "there would be no blood if the Tincture of Fire and Light were not in Water" for it is the fiery Hierarchs of Mars and the Sun, operating in the field of the Water Hierarchs of Cancer, Scorpio, and Pisces which create the mysterious substance we know as blood.

Blood is the most powerful agent involved in the intricate process of bodily regeneration. Here, as in all other departments of spiritual work, regeneration is concerned with the proper blending of Fire and Water. Oxygen, a solar element, is a constructive fire force. Alcohol is also a fire product, but belongs to the destructive fire forces. The effects of alcohol on the blood are serious and far-reaching, for it not only precipitates impurities and weaknesses here and now, but its malefic influence extends into future embodiments. The "taint of alcohol" sets a mark upon egoic powers that will require long ages for its full eradication. The wave of alcoholism sweeping the world today tends to generate a materialism so dense that the words of John will be fulfilled: "And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehendeth it not."

Oxygen, the constructive fire element, is of first importance in sustaining life. Man could not live many minutes without it. As oxygen is the prime element in our present Earth Period, so blood is the special vantage ground of the Spirit at this stage. When the blood has been transmuted into golden light essence, oxygen will be superseded by another and more rarefied Sun element. Blood that is saturated with alcohol is not susceptible to this spiritual alchemy, nor will the unregenerated be able to breathe in the new element. As a consequence, destruction will again overtake many Earth dwellers even as it did in the days of Noah—though not through a deluge, but from the new element that is even now descending upon Earth and filtering the air with its fiery substance.

## THE MYSTERY OF GOLGOTHA

The most profound and important event in the entire world's history was the flowing of blood on Calvary. In preparation for this supreme event the Master taught the Twelve that "This cup is the new testament in my blood." Man can comprehend this "new testament" only when he enters upon regenerated life.

The beginnings of this sublime transmutation were effected by the Master when He shone as the Sun on the Mount of Transfiguration. The processes involved in this transmutation were taught by Him to His most advanced Disciples, Peter, James, and John, during the agony in the Garden. The drops of sweat and the flowing of blood refer to the before-mentioned blending of the inner essences of Fire and Water, a process consummated on Golgotha. With the flowing of blood on Calvary a tremendous spiritual power passed into the center of the Earth. This power has been operating ever since to further forces working for the establishment of a new and regenerated order.

Flowing of blood tends to cleanse an Ego from the taint of egotism which has been engendered throughout long ages of material existence in which man has come to feel himself as separate from the rest of the universe. Christ came that egotism might be changed into altruism and the sense of separateness be replaced by a spirit of universality. Such are the effects flowing from the sacrificial blood shed on Calvary. The ultimate fruitage of that sacrifice will be the fulfillment of the prophetic vision that beheld the time when men would "beat their swords into ploughshares, and their spears into pruninghooks."

It is in commemoration of this little understood mission of Christ that the early Church established the Feast of the Precious Blood, a mystery which was known for millennia before Christ but which had to await His coming for its fulfillment. It is significant that this feast occurs in July when the Sun is in Cancer, the home of the Cherubim, guardians of the sacred life essence. The Archangels, of

whom Christ is chief, occupy the opposite sign of Capricorn. Assisted by Angels, they guide man in the use of this holy life force. It will be remembered that it was the Cherubim who expelled man from the edenic state because of his misuse of the divine creative substance.

“*Many talk of the Lion, few know it.*” The waters of Eternal Life flow from the wounds of the Lion of Judah. Blending of the *White* and the *Red* was demonstrated on Calvary and in the Garden of Gethsemane where Christ first shed His sacred blood in His divine agony. The soul of the world is *red* through generation. It must be made *white* through regeneration. The Christ came to earth to inaugurate this glorious work. The elect, those who make themselves worthy, follow in His steps. Few realize the magic power stored in blood that is pure, and what marvels can be accomplished thereby. In only one way can the purity leading to that power be attained and that is by “living the life.”

Paracelsus gave the following instructions to his disciples: “Take blood shut up in the pelican (self-sacrifice) until the third part of the pelican is filled (three preliminary steps). Then shut in the retort and seal hermetically (inner work connected with the magic of transmutation). In this way you will arrive at the magistry (mystery) of blood as we have taught in the book *Concerning Preparation.*”

The rites of both white and black magic are founded upon the alchemical changes which take place in the blood. The White Brother builds up power by transmuting his own blood; the Black Brother, by the use of another's. It is in the practice of black magic that we discover the origin of the sacrifice of virgins before temple altars and the massacre of the innocents in revenge of the Holy Birth in the time of Herod. It was to gain possession of the highly magnetized blood of the pure and holy John the Baptist that Herodias caused him to be beheaded. She was a skilled Black Magician belonging to one of Egypt's powerful cults of evil, and wished to use the powers concentrated in



the blood (or life) of this holy man in order to prolong her youth and beauty.

### THE HEART IN RELATION TO THE BLOOD

Man is a universe in miniature; the heart is his sun and the seven principal organs are his planetary chain. Ethereal life from the Sun circulates through this planetary system as blood from his heart circulates through his body. The solar circulation requires eleven years, the interval which shows an increase in Sun spots. Sun spots indicate the presence in the Sun of certain so-called "stragglers" of the Second Creative Day (the Sun Period). However, they are glorious archangelic Spirits, holy and radiantly beautiful, and seem dark only by contrast with their more advanced brethren, even as the Sun spots themselves are more brilliant than anything we can conceive of on Earth and appear dark only by contrast with the rest of the solar orb. Similarly, in an individual aura, the karma of each Ego leaves its impress upon the etheric heart. This constitutes the "sun spot" of the aura, and may be seen by one possessing extended vision.

Paracelsus writes that "There are many wonderful virtues in the blood exceeding all belief. Blood exists out of the best root and most potent fountain of the heart. In this can exist no defect, for it has conditions according to the nature of the heart, and is the costly treasure of the whole nature with all that is therein."

The heart is one of the most perfect of all bodily organs and the one most intimately sensitive to spiritual thought. It is destined for a marvelous evolution in the next two or three millennia.

It has been said that objective consciousness is the result of a conflict between the desire nature and the life impulses of the etheric double, each striving for supremacy. In the plant kingdom the etheric vehicle, with its vital forces, is predominant, so the plant has no individual consciousness such as man has. It is the battle of desire which

awakens consciousness of the outer world. This desire was originally stimulated by dynamic angelic forces outside the human sphere of evolution, and their energetic impulses led to the loss of Eden.

It has been observed by esoteric investigators that, physiologically, this conflict between *desire* and *life* for dominion over the physical body is evidenced by the fact that the desire body has invaded the spleen, gateway to the etheric body, and that the life or etheric principle has set up its stronghold in the heart, the organ most intimately connected with the blood, wherein the Ego dwells. Thus, the life principle is enthroned in the heart and blood stream, and operates to eject selfish desires which taint the blood with egotism.

Originally the heart was entirely controlled by the desire body, for it is an involuntary organ; but with the building of the voluntary nervous system, the heart is gradually being transformed into a voluntary muscle. This the Initiate has already accomplished, which accounts in part for his immunity to disease and his power to indefinitely prolong physical life. This will eventually become the heritage of all mankind, for when the heart has been brought under the complete control of the Spirit, the blood, which contains the essence of life, can be withheld from brain areas involved in destructive activities and sent into areas now generally dormant, but which, when thus vivified, confer immortality and the esoteric powers following thereupon.

The work of Initiation must always be accompanied by purification of the blood, for if the blood remains impure spiritual consciousness is distorted and the vibratory rhythms of the entire chain of vehicles is lowered, thus opening the way for the ingress of undesirable entities of the lower Desire World.

Rudolph Steiner, the eminent occultist, writing of the circulatory systems and in particular of the blood, states that their "rhythms depend upon the mysterious connection between breathing and movements of the heart."

In the Hippocratic Collection of 340 B. C., *The Treatise on the Heart* contains the following item of special interest to the esotericist: "The heart is the home of the blood and in the left ventricle some subtle change of blood into spirit takes place." The occultist understands that the left ventricle of the heart contains the individual record of life, presided over by each person's guardian angel. This record becomes the arbiter of his after-life experience.

H. P. Blavatsky, writing of the wonders of the heart, says that "The heart is the King of the Body and its most important organ. Even if the head be severed from the trunk, the heart will continue to beat for half an hour. If wrapped in cotton wool and put in a warm place, the pulsations will continue for some hours."

In the heart is a spot that is the last to die—a spot, marked by a tiny violet light, which is the seat of life. This is also the first point of life in a foetus.

The following definition of occult anatomy by Paracelsus embraces the deeper meanings of the subject and indicates that these are possible of apprehension by a mind illumined by the Spirit: "The man is then dismembered and analyzed and thereby we see what is bone and what is flesh, arteries, etc: also, where these be situated in the body. Yet this is the last thing and the other is more, being that which shall cause new life in man (alluding to the first means of life) through transmutation wherein may be learned what is blood; of Salt, Sulphur, and Mercury is it composed.

"Also what is the heart; of which kind of Mercury and of what kind of Salt and whatsoever there be in the entire body; and this is the true anatomy. Thus is the foundation of the Beginning and therefore must the physician be born.

"But this kind of birth be hard to comprehend, also 'tis a difficult matter whereof to hold speech with them that will not quiet their fancies, and who would trust to their heads rather than walk in the way of wisdom."

## ASTROLOGICAL CORRELATIONS

Again, Paracelsus writes: "All things are contained in all things . . . The spleen follows the course of Saturn. The gall is in nature like Mars. By reason of senses do the kidneys unfold. Venus brings forth the fruits of the body. As Mercury, so do the lungs work. Jupiter runneth his spirit in the blood particularly in sleep to moderate all violence. As to the other stars ye should remember that they are also in the body."

Modern esotericists declare that the blood is formed in the marrow of the bones under Saturn. Jupiter rules the red arterial blood that carries nourishment to all parts of the body. Venus rules the venous blood which brings the impure blood back to the heart to be cleansed. The Sun rules the heart, the central seat of the blood. Mars rules the iron in the red blood and attracts oxygen, the solar element. Mercury rules the lungs which are the focal point of blood oxygenation. The serum (watery substance) is ruled by the Moon and Cancer. The fibrin (stringy substance) is ruled by Jupiter and Pisces. The iron, or red coloring matter, is ruled by Mars and Scorpio. Or once more to quote Paracelsus, "There is a star behind every process going on in man. All the forces of heaven have their corresponding activity in those parts of the body that are expressive of their powers."

## Chapter IX

### ***The Role of the Ductless Glands in Spiritual Attainment***

#### PHYSIOLOGY AND THE DUCTLESS GLANDS

*There are two species of philosophy, one of heaven and one of earth. The philosopher is acquainted with things of the lower sphere, the astronomer with things above. In their medical aspect, philosophy is concerned with Earth and Water in man, and astronomy with Fire and Air.—Paracelsus.*

In the above quotation, the element "Heaven" correlates with the mysterious "fifth essence" of the alchemist, an element whole in itself, containing the lower four elements in a spiritual unity. It is sometimes called AZOTH, a word symbolizing "alpha and omega," the first and the last.

In occult anatomy this spiritual essence is most active in the chain of etheric centers which material scientists deal with under the name of *endocrine glands*, glands of internal secretion. It is a curious and thought-provoking fact that esoteric teachers of the Orient taught for many centuries the existence of certain centers which they defined as foci of spiritual power. It is now discovered that these centers are situated almost exactly in various ductless glands. The word endocrine is derived from two Greek words, *endon* (within), and *krinein* (to separate).

The seven principal endocrine glands are the pineal and pituitary in the head; the parathyroids, thyroid, and thymus in the region of the throat and chest; the spleen and adrenals in the abdomen. We may also include among these glands the pancreas and the gonads which have an endocrine function in addition to the one ordinarily known.

The endocrine system is the anatomical sphinx.

During centuries of research by anatomists and physiologists the function and purpose of the endocrine glands remained undiscovered. Not until the present century were their functions studied and reported upon to any extent.

Theophile de Borden, a physician at the court of Louis XV, was among the first to state clearly the function of internal secretions. Eustachias, an Italian anatomist, reported the discovery of the adrenals in the year 1563. However, for long after this the study of the ductless glands consisted largely of picturesque speculations. In 1716 the Academy of Science in Bordeaux proposed as a subject for competitive essays "What Is the Use of the Suprarenal Glands?" In 1850 Curling, an Englishman, connected the thyroid with goiter. Continuing on the subject, we quote the following from an unidentified newspaper clipping.

Living in Paris in 1886 was a young physician, well prepared scientifically and alert both to aid his patients and to advance the healing science to which he had dedicated his life. His name was Pierre Marie. To him came in quick succession, two women suffering from a curious combination of symptoms. They had frequent severe headaches, the cause of which could not be discovered. In addition, both of the women complained that their features had so altered since the beginning of the headaches that even close relatives sometimes failed to recognize them. Their faces had grown broader and coarser, the bones of their legs seemed to be growing thicker, even the palms of their hands were becoming daily broader and the fingers thicker and more bony.

Perhaps if only one such curious case had reached Dr. Marie he would have thought little of it. Physicians, then as now, saw many patients whose condition proved peculiar and difficult to understand. But two such patients at the same time, both with the same

symptoms and with symptoms as curious as these were, was too great a challenge to Dr. Marie's curiosity to be ignored.

He studied his two cases very carefully. Each developed, as the illness progressed, what was clearly a tumor of the brain. Further investigation showed that the brain tumors were located precisely at that little, neglected appendage just underneath the brain which anatomists knew about but did not understand. Both of the unfortunate patients were suffering, Dr. Marie proved, from a disorder of the pituitary gland.

That was the first clue to the purpose of the pituitary and to its duties in the human body. Dr. Marie and other physiologists followed up the clue. We now know that it is that small pituitary gland, no larger than a cherry, which directs the growth of the human body, so that normal children grow normally and not into giants or dwarfs.

Indeed, the rare individuals who do develop into giants or dwarfs do so, it is now known, chiefly if not entirely as the result of some derangement of the pituitary gland. Not even the whole of the pituitary needs to be involved in the derangement. Small as the whole gland is it contains three separate parts, only the foremost one of which, as it lies in its small saddle in the base of the skull, is the one that makes the human body grow as it should or as it should not.

Among the more important recent studies on the subject is the treatise by the late Dr. Louis Berman of Columbia University, entitled *Glands Regulating Personality*.

"There are in the body," writes Dr. Berman, "certain glands which, though small in size, are important in function. They are now known to be connected with growth, metabolism and nutrition. They also maintain or upset mental balance by certain secretions which they pour into the blood. Their disordered condition can throw man into a permanent condition of fear, anger, despondency, until

he becomes a drug addict—drugged or hypnotized, as it were, by the action of these little glands.’’

Such pronouncements as these are intensely interesting to the occultist. He knows they are based on truth as far as they go. There are no other organs in the human body that require for their understanding more knowledge of the inner vehicles of man and their action and reaction on the physical body.

The glands with which physiology has made us most familiar may be defined as organs which produce useful chemical secretions. The liver, for example, produces bile, the glands of the mouth secrete saliva, and so on. These glands have ducts through which their products are channeled into the parts of the body they specifically serve. Thus bile goes into the intestines, saliva into the mouth, the secretion of the sweat glands onto the skin.

Now such is not the construction and office of the glands with which we are here concerned. They are seated more deeply into the body and possess no ducts through which to pass their secretions into a specific organ or area of the body. They are *ductless*; they have no canals to the exterior; and their products enter directly into the bloodstream and the lymphatics. They serve the body as a whole. They are, in fact, a mediating set of glands between the more external and larger organs in the body and the set of psychical centers situated in the vital or etheric body.

These glands, as already noted, are also called the endocrine or hormone-producing glands. The word hormones comes from a Greek verb meaning “to arouse” or “to set in motion,” and is used by science to describe a substance which is formed in one organ of the body and then conveyed by the blood to another organ upon which it has a stimulating effect. The word endocrine refers to both substance and gland. Deprived of their own especial endocrine substance, neither the muscles nor the cells of the body could function.

The occult scientist has knowledge connected with the ductless glands which is not accepted by *materia medica*,



but which sheds much light on some of the problems that baffle the physical investigator. One important fact is that these small organs do not belong to the physical body, but to its vital or etheric counterpart. The ductless glands and the blood are the highest expressions of this more subtle etheric body. Since all occult development is intimately connected with the etheric double, we can realize how important it is to have an understanding of the nature and function of these glands in relation to the processes of regeneration.

These endocrine glands had their beginning in the Second Great Creative Day (Sun Period). Their ultimate development belongs to the Christian or Sun Initiation, a stage of development attained only after entering into the Greater Mysteries, which embody the highest teachings of this present Earth Period (Fourth Creative Day). It is significant that knowledge of these glands remained hidden until now, when the Ancient Wisdom and esoteric Christianity is again coming to light. Our understanding of the spiritual and physical significance of their functions is developing parallel with this restored spiritual science and initiatory teaching. The endocrines are especially sensitive to psycho-mental influences, and they will reveal more and more of the curious and remarkable powers which are the concomitant of Initiation. These additional powers are treated at length in Chapter VI of this anatomy series: *The Two Nervous Systems and Their Relationship to Spiritual Development*.

#### THE PINEAL GLAND

The pineal gland is a tiny organ resembling a pine cone, as its name indicates, which is concealed in a "cave" a little above and behind the pituitary gland at the base of the brain and behind the eyes. It contains nerve cells similar to those in the retina of the eye. Spiritually considered, it is the most important and mysterious gland in the entire endocrine system. It makes its appearance dur-

ing the first month of foetal life. Its size and shape are regulated largely by the mental and spiritual development of the individual. In a remote past the pineal gland was the organ whereby pre-human man contacted the physical world. Physical science corroborates this statement of the occultist when it declares that "All vertebrates possess this relic of the third eye, which was an early organ for the purpose of sensing light and shadows." In the near future this same organ will be our connecting link with inner realms. We may properly refer to it as an organ of inner-world contact. It secretes an etheric light substance in a manner resembling the pine cone's exudation of resin. From this we can understand why Egyptian Temple neophytes wore pine cones bound around their heads to signify their degree of spiritual proficiency. ]

The pineal gland is the masculine organ of regeneration. In biblical symbology it is Joseph, Father of the Christed man. It is the receptacle for the seed atoms of the desire and mental bodies before these bodies are formed. The organs of generation and regeneration correspond closely in their physical features. The pineal gland is similar to the male generative organ, and is situated between four protuberances called the *corpora quadi-gemina*. Of these four, the two lower are called the buttocks and the two upper the testes. From the protuberance or pointer in the pineal gland invisible electric sparks flow downward, magnetically attracted by the powers resident in the feminine polarized pituitary body. These contacts are of a spiritually regenerative nature. They form the higher counterpart of the physical generative function. It is indeed a wondrously constructed parallelism between the center of generation at the base of the spine and the center of regeneration at its apex in the head. At the one level man experiences physical marriage, at the other, the consummation of the transmutative life which results in the spiritual union of the polar opposites within the individual and which is esoterically termed the Mystic Marriage.

## THE PITUITARY GLAND

The pituitary gland is located in the skull just behind the root of the nose and is enclosed in the *cella turcia* (Turkish saddle), a depression in the sphenoid bone. It is a small double-structured gland, the two parts of which are called the pre-pituitary or anterior lobe and the post-pituitary or posterior lobe.

Subnormal secretion of the pituitary gland results in low blood pressure and general body sluggishness. Children thus afflicted are mentally retarded, apathetic, easily discouraged and lose self-control quickly.

The general effect of supernormal secretion is high blood pressure with excessive nervous and mental activity; also it leads to aggressiveness tending toward domination and imperiousness.

The anterior lobe controls growth of the skeleton. When this lobe dominates, the individual is generally tall, with large hands and feet and a prominent nose. Giants represent over-activity of the anterior lobe; dwarfs, under-activity of this lobe. Its removal causes death. The extract from the posterior lobe is pituitrin, familiar even to laymen by reason of its use in obstetrics. Both the posterior and anterior lobes play an important role in sexual growth and activity, and the secretions of this double gland produce a distinctly feminine or a distinctly masculine type of body, depending on which of its secretions predominate.

The pineal gland, which as previously noted, is masculine in its regenerative nature, is located in the posterior end of the third ventricle; its feminine polarized opposite, the pituitary gland, is situated at its anterior end. The anterior lobe of the latter originates in the embryo as an outgrowth from the mouth cavity which in the fourth week meets the posterior down-growth from the brain. These two parts then develop together into the adult pituitary gland, but the history of their separate origins remains visible in the gland-cleft which persists in adults. The posterior lobe, it may be added, which had its origin in the

brain's down-growth, technically called the *infundibulum*, represents an outgrowth from the sympathetic nervous system and is composed of nerve tissue.

Material science has discovered that the pituitary gland influences activity of the ovaries, the female generative organs, and that it is also concerned with the mysterious processes of puberty. It has been discovered that this gland, like the pineal, appears in the first month of embryonic development and connects through openings with both the mouth and the spinal cavity. At this stage the Ego stores up in the pituitary gland spiritual forces that will later be drawn upon in the further building of its body after birth.

In biblical symbology the pituitary gland is represented variously as, for instance, by Noah's Ark, by the Cherubin hovering above the left side of the Holy of Holies, by the new moon worshipped by the twelve tribes, by the laver of purification in the Temple, and by the blessed Virgin Mary.

#### THE THYROID GLAND

The thyroid gland is located in the throat and consists of two lobes, one on each side of the trachea, or windpipe. Two of its most basic functions are to aid in the maintenance of mental balance and to assist in the formation of habits. Its removal always causes death, since it is the link connecting spirit and personality, a veritable bridge between the objective and subjective planes. Its reactions are dual, being both physical and spiritual. Its secretions, when sufficient, produce nervous energy and clear, quick perception; when insufficient, dullness, laziness and lack of self-control. Hyper-thyroid individuals are emotional, irritable, easily upset. They are extremely vivacious, continuous conversationalists; invariably nervous, restless, erratic and unstable, craving excitement and activity, and subject to violent emotional outbursts. When the thyroid becomes tumourously enlarged, the effect is goiter.

The thyroid gland is one of the most important in the glandular chain as it is closely interrelated with all the others; it also helps to control growth of the physical body and is the link between the brain and the organs of generation. Situated as it is, the thyroid has an important function in the development of the larynx as man progresses from his present terrestrial to his future celestial state. The spiritual essence of the thyroid aids in this development.

The processes involved in refining the body are materially helped or hindered by breathing, which blends the powers of the air and the blood. "In breath," declares the late eminent occult scientist, Rudolf Steiner, "man shows whether he is united with the lower demoniac or the higher Christ principle." The gill-like appendage of early humanity has become the intricate "voice-box" of the present, and it will become a spiritualized new organ or "holy cup" in the future. The thyroid will increase in spiritual power tremendously.

Roy Graham Hoskins, author of *The Tides of Life; the Endocrine Glands and Bodily Adjustment*, says, "The thyroid is a regulator of energy in adapting one to his environment." Anton J. Carlson, in *The Machinery of the Body*, adds that the thyroid "is a specific necessity for the development of the reproductive mechanism in males and for the lunar cycles in females." Dr. Carlson refers here only to the physical aspect of the Moon cycle. The occult scientist knows that the spiritual effect of the thyroid may be equally powerful, particularly from the time of New to Full Moon.

In advanced individuals the thyroid's spiritual secretion aids in developing the larynx as a center of power wherefrom the spoken word becomes a healing and a blessing. It is the flower that blooms in the throat. The word thyroid is formed of two Greek words: *thya*, meaning a door, and *oidos*, signifying a likeness.

Involution is the process by which the Spirit first descends to dwell in physical form. In so doing it impregnates the physical with the spiritual, thus giving to the

personality the likeness of the higher nature. The words of the Christ sound through the ages: "The shepherd (the Ego) that enters by the door (the celestial archetype) is the shepherd of the sheep (the body atoms)."

#### THE PARATHYROIDS

There are four small glands closely associated with the thyroid. These minute bodies are approximately the size of wheat grains and are situated in the epithelium of the anembryonic bronchial cleft. They are paired, two on each side of the thyroid.

The parathyroids have close relationship to the nerves. A deficiency in their secretion causes paralysis and affects the muscular control of the face. Their removal causes death, usually in from twelve to forty-eight hours.

In the processes of regeneration as related to the reconstruction and perfecting of the two nervous systems of the body, these four minute glands will play an important role in establishing complete polarity. It is under conditions of perfect polarity that the Initiate body is built. Such a body is so charged with the emanations of spirit that it possesses a lightness and buoyancy which make it almost superphysical; at the same time it possesses an inner strength and resilience which lift it beyond the devastating ravages of disease and dissolution. When the full power of these small glands is released the body will become in very truth the temple not made with hands, but eternal in the heavens.

#### THE THYMUS

The thymus, a pinkish gland, is located in the upper part of the chest. It lies between the two pleural sacs, in front of and above the heart, and back of the sternum. The thymus is not an enduring organ. It attains its greatest size and activity during prenatal development and begins to atrophy about the second year after birth, disap-

pearing entirely at puberty. A substance composed largely of the mother's blood is stored in this gland during the prenatal life of the child and becomes a source of nourishment to the embryo. The vital ethers in the mother's milk sustain this gland, but when the child is weaned the gland begins to dissolve into lymphatic and fatty tissue. The mother who nurses her child has a closer tie with it and, therefore, a greater influence over it than one who does not, because the vital ethers from her milk are circulated in the bloodstream of the child.

A child cannot form its own red blood corpuscles in the marrow bones until its desire body is born at puberty, so until that time it is dependent upon the substance furnished by its parent and stored in the thymus gland during intrauterine life for the manufacture of its red blood. The thymus is, therefore, the gland of childhood. With rare exceptions, by the age of twenty-one only vestiges of its characteristic tissue remain to indicate the place where it once was.

The thymus not only regulates the child's bodily growth but has some influence on its mental development as well—as shown by an investigation of four hundred idiot children which revealed that seventy-five per cent had no thymus, although the thyroid was present in a normal condition.

The thymus gland secretes a substance necessary for the hardening of eggshell. When it is removed in pigeons their eggs are laid without shells; but when they are fed thymus extract the eggs become normal again. If a hen's eggs are too soft-shelled, these also become normal if thymus extract is added to a fowl's diet.

A phase of thymus activity was finished when man and mammal began to incubate eggs within their own bodies.

#### THE SPLEEN

“The spleen is the foetus incubator for the red blood cells and after birth becomes the incinerator for the red

blood cells," writes Professor Dorsep, former Associate Professor of Anthropology at the University of Chicago.

The spleen is the largest ductless gland in the body. It lies between the stomach and diaphragm. Its duties are numerous and important, including the manufacture of red and white blood corpuscles, the storing of iron in the blood, and as an aid to digestion. It has a potent effect upon the nervous system, both directly and indirectly because this gland is, perhaps, the principal link between the physical body and the etheric double. The spleen controls certain nerve essences (vital sugar fluid). This gland's etheric counterpart is the gateway for solar ethers which energize the nervous system, and without which the nerves could not function. The solar forces pass directly through the spleen to the solar plexus and are thence distributed throughout the body, being visible to clairvoyant vision as lines of force which carry impurities out of the body. The spleen is the great Sun station of the body. It differs from certain other important glands in that its removal is not of serious consequence, the etheric organ continuing to function as usual due to its powerful organization.

#### THE ADRENALS

The adrenals, or suprarenals, receive their name from their position just above the kidneys. They are the size and shape of a large bean. The removal of one produces no noticeable result, but the removal of both is always fatal within a few hours. In the human embryo each adrenal begins as two organs which later unite into one with two parts, an outside cortex or bark and a medulla or core. The cortex arises from the middle germ layer and is derived from the Wolffian body. The medulla is part of the outer germ layer and is derived from the same tissue as the autonomic nervous system. Their importance is second only to the brain and no other organs in the body are so well supplied with blood. The cortex is masculine; the medulla, feminine.

The secretions of the cortex aid in the development of



masculine characteristics such as courage and aggressiveness; the medulla favors the feminine traits of gentleness, affection, and the power of healing. The latter's influence throws "oil on troubled waters" by allaying anger and soothing frayed nerves. The ancients associated these minute glands with the kidneys, organs which they held in high reverence. When animals were offered in sacrifice, the kidneys were removed with appropriate ceremony and within the sacred precincts of the Temple.

The adrenal cortex correlates with the masculine or voluntary nervous system, and bears a close relationship to the cerebrum or masculine brain.

Adrenalin, the hormone of the medulla, was the first endocrine secretion to be isolated. Its principal constituent is the same as a gland secretion found in the skin of a toad. An early Chinese toad-skin preparation was a well-known remedy for dropsy and heart trouble. This hormone is a powerful heart stimulant and was so used in Europe until 1775, when it was supplanted by digitalis.

Adrenalin exerts influence upon all smooth muscles energized by fibers of the autonomic nervous system. This places a large responsibility upon it, and great is its influence on human destiny. Physical science has now raised the question as to whether the adrenal glands are a "brain" which takes charge when man is confronted with an emergency that threatens his well-being.

Adrenalin "sets one up"—speeds the heartbeat; draws blood from the spleen, kidneys, and intestines, thus reducing their size; sends blood to brain and lungs; orders the liver to give the blood more sugar (energy); makes blood coagulate more rapidly, thus lessening the danger of excessive bleeding from injuries. It wins battles and makes heroes. Its lack, contrariwise, produces fear and a tendency toward cowardliness.

Generally speaking, therefore, we may say that the adrenals are energy glands. When functioning normally they produce both physical and mental strength and alertness. These glands are a curious re-echoing of the mascu-

line-feminine capacities of the Spirit. In certain disturbances of the adrenals a person of one sex will manifest the habits and characteristics of the other. These marked changes can usually be traced to a prenatal state in which the original rhythm of the archetype was changed. If this disturbance occurs after puberty it will reverse sex characteristics. Such are negative or inharmonious reactions.

As the race evolves it will develop equally within each individual the dual masculine and feminine qualities. The adrenals will then function in a positive and constructive manner only, becoming active agents in establishing perfect equalization or polarity.

### THE GONADS

The gonads are the sex glands of men and women. Their influence upon the physical, desire, and mental bodies has been studied and tabulated throughout the ages. Yet physiologists know comparatively little concerning their functions. These glands are located in the sacral (sacred) region of the body near the base of the spinal column. They contain an oily secretion from the blood and are the seat of the generative processes in the body. It has been discovered that they are the center of the disease called prostatitis. In degeneration, the gonad's solution becomes diseased and malodorous; in normal generative life it is a clear fluid, more or less volatile; in regenerative processes, as the blood becomes purified and more gaseous, the "oil" becomes "mercurial"—alchemically fixed, as the Ancient Wisdom describes it—and capable of infinite transformations and multiplications. Under its benign influence the body may become the white manna from heaven.

Gonad is a Greek word for *seed*, a term used for both testes and ovaries. The gonads are not necessary to life, but they are necessary for the continuation of the race or species. They secrete a hormone which supplies the impulse back of sex behaviour.

Adult female gonads contain ova in various stages of development. The ova or germ cells develop in the Graafian follicles. When ripe an ovum bursts through the wall of the ovary and escapes. The ruptured follicle reassembles and enlarges for seven days, filling the rent in the ovarian wall; then it breaks up and is absorbed before the next ovum matures. If the ovum is fertilized, the follicle continues to develop for three months and persists until the end of pregnancy. The ruptured and changing follicle is called *corpus luteum* (yellow body) on account of its color after the escape of the ovum. The hormone of the ovary has been called an "extract of the contents of the Graafian follicle."

Removal or atrophy of female gonads arrests the expression of secondary sexual characteristics.

Male gonads contain spermatozoa. These develop into germ cells and fertilize the ovum. Absence or atrophy of male gonads produces certain changes in the larynx and skeleton, and checks the development of the reproductive mechanism. It also results in an enlargement of the adrenal cortex and the pituitary gland, diminishes thyroid growth and checks thymus development. Removal of the gonads in either sex produces certain endocrine gland changes.

The practice of transplanting monkey glands to a human body is a travesty on the highest and noblest impulses of nature, and nature sees to it that her laws remain inviolate. Science recognizes that germ cells do not survive transplanting. It is known that the gonad lives only a short time afterwards. Most of the cells die in a few hours. Those surviving can at best produce only temporary restoration. True rejuvenation must be a spiritual process, lifted high above mere bodily functions. Dr. Carlson, previously quoted, says rejuvenation by gland grafts is a biological fantasy and a catering to sexual degeneracy; he adds that if "the transplant be from goat or monkey, the surgeon is the monkey and the patient is the goat."

The gonads normally function as endocrine glands; consequently, the two sexes differ in structure and be-

havior. Specialization in bodies is older than civilization. Sir Arthur Keith, the English scientist, says, "No legislation can blot out structural differences which have taken geological epochs to produce." However, substitution of gonads does effect such changes. An instance is on record of two female birds that displayed all the natural instincts of the female, laid eggs and mothered young. The female organs were destroyed by tuberculosis and were then replaced with male organs, which was followed by male behaviour. Sex characteristics depend on sexual hormones and sex-transformation in adults is possible.

In the light of the foregoing the following statement is interesting physiologically and psychologically: "Between the two beings so complex and so diverse as man and woman, the whole of life (he might well have added the entire cycle of earth lives—Ed.) is not too long for them to know one another well and to learn to love one another worthily."

The endocrines are so new to science that but little has been verified relative to their mutual interdependency. Dr. Carlson has verified this much: "Gonads cannot function if thyroid, and possibly pituitary and adrenal cortex, are sub-normal. Removal of thyroid and probably gonads stimulate the pituitary; thyroid extract appears to stimulate adrenals and pituitary; also heart, liver, and kidneys; removal of the thyroid stimulates the parathyroids and removal of the gonads retards the atrophy of the thymus and tends to produce changes in the pituitary and adrenal cortex."

It is said further that the removal of the thyroid is followed by cretinism in children, a congenital condition characterized by stunted physical development and sometimes deformity. In adults the removal of the gland causes myxedema, a roughness or scalliness of the skin. Removal of the parathyroids results in death, as does also the removal of the pancreas and the adrenals. Loss of the pituitary gland brings on infantilism in children and impotence in adults. Removal of the thymus is followed by

sexual precocity; of gonads, by sex infantilism in children, and atrophy of the secondary sexual characteristics in adults. About the removal of the pineal gland nothing yet is known, but esoterically it would tend to render more difficult the acquisition of higher mental faculties and positive clairvoyance. The negative clairvoyant would not be affected to any great degree.

Most of each endocrine may be removed from animals without apparent loss in function of its internal secretion. The scientific inference is that no endocrine normally works to its full capacity in an animal body. This is because their bodies are not yet closely enough attuned to spiritual rhythms of the inner worlds.

The anatomy of the endocrines is almost an untouched field, although they are known to shape the body features, hair, stature; to determine racial characteristics, personality, intellectual, and moral leanings. We must look to the endocrines for an answer to puzzling problems in connection with all these.

Arrested development of these glands, or their overstimulation, brings such abnormal conditions as overweight, underweight, cretinism, idiocy, mental disorders, sexual malformations, and general rundown conditions of the body. Consequently, the medical world turns more and more often to these sphinx-like centers of power for solutions to physical problems.

The following glands fall into three categories: The pineal and pituitary glands have to do with the Spirit; the thyroid serves as a link between the Spirit and personality; and the two adrenals, spleen, and thymus glands, relate most closely to the personality.

Intensive study of the glands and their far-reaching effects in human life tends to develop a more sympathetic and tolerant attitude toward the idiosyncracies of others, since these are often induced by conditions that are not easily remedied—sometimes having their roots in previous lives and, therefore, requiring changes that may extend considerably beyond the immediate present.

## PSYCHOLOGY AND THE DUCTLESS GLANDS

A new concept that higher forms of life are being governed by a "glandocracy," with the glands of internal secretion as supreme rulers exerting absolute control over an individual's functions from conception to death, and also over the relations of men and women and other vertebrate animals to each other, is presented by Dr. Charles R. Stockard, Professor of Anatomy in the Medical College of Cornell University. We quote:

In this glandocracy, according to the new concept, chemical messengers, or hormones, are sent out by the various glands to distant parts of the body by means of the bloodstream to keep the body going as a functioning, integrated whole, biologically as well as psychologically.

These chemical glandocrats determine not only the purely physiological functions of the organism but also have the first and last word in the makeup of the personality, in the relationship between the sexes and between small and large groups of individuals.

"Recent experiments show," Dr. Stockard said, "that even such an emotion as mother love, with its supreme significance to the preservation of species, is dependent on the action of one of these 'glandocrats,' a chemical messenger known as prolactin, sent out by the pituitary gland located at the base of the skull.

"A virgin rat completely oblivious to the presence of young rats and with no reaction to mother them," Dr. Stockard pointed out, "will become entirely different in her instinctive reactions after a few injections of prolactin. After such injections she eagerly adopts and mothers as many young as may be placed with her."

Dr. Stockard did not indulge in speculation. Some of the scientists present, however, jocularly remarked that this "glandocrat," prolactin, originally discov-

ered by Dr. Oscar Riddle of the Carnegie Institution of Washington, may harbor the secret of international peace and amity between men and nations.

“If a way could only be found,” a scientist was overheard to remark, “to persuade some of the apostles of hate now in high positions to submit to a few injections of prolactin we may bring about peace on earth and good-will toward men by Christmas. The millennium may yet be brought about by chemical means.”

From his extensive experiments in studying different constitutional types, Professor Stockard presented a new concept of the relations of the glands of internal secretion, or endocrine glands, to the nervous system. “The experiments” he said, “show the glands’ great general importance to society as influencing the instinctive behaviour of man.”

“From a survey of their activities,” he added, “it is realized that the endocrine glands occupy the position of high command in coordinating the functions and behaviours of all our bodily organs and tissues. They influence in a most profound way our instinctive nervous reactions. They bring about that harmonious balance which we think of as the joy and vigor of perfect health, and they are an important part of the material basis for human temperament and the temperamental foundations of personality.

“Very gradual shifts in influence among the members of this high command are responsible for the constitutional and personality changes during the different periods of our lives, and more pronounced disagreements and violent disruptions among the members of this glandular oligarchy, metabolism and nervous and mental functions.”

“The nervous system and the endocrine system,” Dr. Stockard explained, “are the two mechanisms that integrate the parts and functions of the bodies of man and higher animals into an harmonious whole. More-

over, the influences of the nervous and endocrine systems reach out beyond the single individual to integrate behaviours between the sexes and among the different life periods in perpetuating the vast social scale.”

The effects of the ductless glands is new to material science, it is true, but their activities in the development of the race have long been known to occult science. During the course of vast evolutionary epochs the activity of specific sets of glands changed the entire anatomical and physiological structure of evolving life, together with its environmental habitudes.

Material science agrees now with occultism that children are born with certain glands active which determine their physical growth and their emotional reaction to life; also, that at certain definite ages specific glands are stimulated into renewed activity. It is always the dominant gland that controls the prsonality.

Louis Berman, the late eminent endocrinologist, in chapters dealing with *Glandular Dominance of Maturity*, lists five general types:

*Pituitary*: Sufficient: Large bony frame, clear thinkers, creators, ideal masculine type.

*Pituitary*: Insufficient: Small delicate skeleton, weak muscles, mentally sluggish, lacking in stamina.

*Thyroid*: Sufficient: Excess energy, rapid perception, magnetic, perpetual workers.

*Thyroid*: Insufficient: Lack of self-control, tired, dull, lazy, and retarded.

*Thymus*: Sufficient: Angel-child type, graceful, beautiful, alert, but not fitted for life's conflicts.

*Thymus*: Insufficient: In infancy leads to precocity, both physical and mental, with early maturity.

*Adrenal*: Sufficient: vigor, energy, efficient worker, great internal driving power.

*Adrenal*: Insufficient: Physical and mental bankruptcy, neurasthenia or nervous prostration.



*Gonad*: Sufficient: High voice, light-hearted, emotional.

*Gonad*: Insufficient: Special mental and medical problems.

The pineal is not listed as its work is largely with the psychic and spiritual natures of man. The work of this gland will receive lengthy tabulation when man has evolved a purely spiritual system of psychology. Material science, however, has learned that the pineal does retard reproductive gland activity and, conversely, the gonads have a tendency to obstruct the pineal.

Dr. Lazell writes most interestingly in his *Anatomy of Emotion* that the "God-given life of protoplasm is destined for a higher expression than mere animal existence." "Spiritualization begins undoubtedly in the emotions," he declares. "The lifting from instinctive emotionalism into spiritualization produces certain effects through or by the glands, whose secretions, or hormones, are poured directly into the blood. These hormones are chemical messengers which continually change the reaction of the nervous tissue, especially the sympathetic, and also the reactions of the muscles which it supplies. In order to carry out this dual action, these glands are arranged in pairs and their secretions have opposing effects. Without them nervous tissue could only act instinctively and there could be no element of choice between the two sets of impulses."

The modern concept of physiology and psychology are that the secretions of some, if not all, of these glands are controlled by the emotions. Dr. Ivo Geikie Cobb, author of *Glands of Destiny*, and other authorities on the subject state that most men and women who have controlled history were, in turn, controlled by their own endocrine glands, "those little things ranging in size from a grain of wheat to a chestnut." A notable illustration of the power of the endocrines to change the course of a life is found in the case of Napoleon. Again quoting:

Napoleon would not have lost the battle of Waterloo if his pituitary gland had not become defective, pre-

venting the great military genius from making those quick decisions for which he was famous.

Napoleon had a superior brain, capable of inventing new military strategy, but what made him master of Europe was a powerful set of endocrine glands. Had these been only average he would have been a valuable adviser to some aggressive personality who would have used and taken credit for Bonaparte's ideas. The glands boss the rest of the body but it seems that the thyroid is a sort of boss of the others, or at least, like a coxswain, it sets the stroke for the others. Also they act and react on each other.

In Napoleon's system there was a weak sister in the chain and though it might have done well enough for an ordinary slow-living mortal it finally broke down under the terrific strain of his life. This was the pituitary gland situated at the base of the brain whose job it was to control the growth of the bones. That it was not over-vigorous in youth is indicated by the Corsican's short stature. When his historic career began, it had to work overtime as shown by the instantaneous decisions Napoleon was perpetually making and which is another function made possible by the pituitary.

When the conqueror of Europe made the bad decision to invade Russia, probably that gland was already beginning to falter. The laggard gland had fallen still further behind during the exile at Elba. By that time the world had learned most of his military tricks, and now he could invent nothing new as proved by the big test at Waterloo. He not only failed to handle this decisive battle with his old brilliance but is said to have actually fallen asleep for a while in the midst of it.

These things would lead the modern endocrinologist to suspect pituitary deficiency, but the autopsy, performed after his death at St. Helena, proved that this was an actual fact, though the surgeons of that time knew nothing of what the endocrine meant.

## VITAMINS AND ENDOCRINES

There has been discovered a direct relationship between peculiarities of the personality and deficiency of vitamins. These, in turn, are being correlated with endocrine functions.

### THYMUS REQUIRES VITAMIN B

Size and influence of thymus wanes with puberty and adolescence. It is closely related to nutrition and growth. A storage organ, it protects the body against debilitation from loss of food. The thymus has been termed the "barometer of nutrition." It becomes *smaller and may completely atrophy* due to excessive malnutrition. Vitamin B restores the thymus to normal functioning.

### ADRENALS, GLANDS OF COMBAT, REQUIRE VITAMIN B AND C

Each gland is double; the outer or cortex produces internal secretion and intercortin; the inner portion or medulla produces adrenalin. Intercortin and adrenalin are inventions for massing all the strength of muscles and blood for meeting an emergency. Internal secretion of the cortex controls brain growth and development of sex glands. The removal of the adrenals, as said before, means certain death in a few days, thus indicating some function pertaining to the continuance of life. Malnutrition produces enlargement of the adrenals. By deficiency of Vitamin C they become twice their natural size and weight. Deficiency of Vitamin A *increases* the amount of adrenalin. Deficiency of Vitamin B *decreases* the amount of adrenalin.

### PARATHYROID GLANDS REQUIRE VITAMIN D

These four minute glands lie in such close proximity to the thyroid that they were for a long time considered to be part of it. They are the regulators of the calcium intake of the body. These glands are not present in fish as

there is so much lime in the sea that fish do not need a regulator. Fish manufacture Vitamin D in the liver. Parathyroids are, however, present in all land animals, to conserve and regulate the calcium supply. They enlarge in calcium deficiency as the thyroid enlarges in iodine deficiency. When there is a life deficiency in the food the blood extracts it from the bones to fill its lack. Vitamin D foods facilitate assimilation of calcium by bones and relieve the strain on the parathyroids. Parathyroid deficiency causes extreme sensitivity of the nervous system. The parathyroids and calcium metabolism have a definite relation to a neurotic constitution.

Calcium foods are milk, cheese, carrots, turnips, oranges, prunes, beets, and apples. Vitamin D foods are egg yolk, cod-liver oil, liver, fish fat, and foods treated with ultra-violet light.

#### REPRODUCTIVE GLANDS: THE TESTES AND OVARIES REQUIRE VITAMINS A, B, C

Vitamin A and B give off radiations similar to X-ray and radium. These rays produce powerful effects upon living matter, being channels for inner-plane forces. Deficiency of A produces interference with the ovarian hormone that regulates the rhythm of feminine sexual cycles. When these rhythms are upset they become irregular, hence inharmonious, causing a reduction of fertility. Deficiency of Vitamin B produces general degenerative atrophy of the ovaries. Vitamin C is necessary to ovarian nutrition. A, B, C, are the building stones for formation of healthy ova. Vitamin E is especially related to the uterus and reproduction. Deficiency of E in the male results in marked disturbance in sperm production, pronounced deficiency resulting in sterility.

#### PITUITARY GLAND REQUIRES VITAMINS B AND E

The pituitary is the gland of many hormones and functions. It controls growth in childhood and adolescence,

sexual development and sexual metabolism. It is necessary for proper evolution of the reproductive glands. The post-pituitary regulates the water balance of the body, blood pressure, gastro-intestinal tract, and influences the fatty and sugar metabolism. It also determines the pigmentation of the skin. There is more Vitamin E found in the pituitary than in any other gland. A deficiency of Vitamin B castrates it physiologically and psychologically. It is as important for the pituitary as is Vitamin E for the testes and placenta.

Normal functioning of the pituitary involves the metabolism of manganese. Manganese foods prevent pituitary strain. These include potatoes, lettuce, agar-agar, wheat germ, liver, peanuts, walnuts, and almonds.

Copper foods are necessary to the blood. Oats, almonds, kidney beans, peas, asparagus, corn, lentils, and barley are among the highest in copper.

#### THYROID GLAND

Iodine, the key substance in the thyroid gland, is the controller of vitality and growth; also the protector against injuries and intoxicants. It secretes thyroxin and needs a continuous supply of iodine foods which are found principally in sea products.

#### ASTROLOGICAL CORRELATIONS WITH THE DUCTLESS GLANDS

*As there is a zodiac in heaven, so there is a zodiac in man: as there is a firmament in heaven, so a firmament in the body. Heaven operates in us.—Paracelsus.*

The ductless glands occupy certain important and sensitive points in the body. Their origin may be traced to the early beginnings of the evolution of man. There have been periods when they functioned actively, and others when they remained dormant. In future races they will possess a high spiritual power in connection with extended consciousness and the awakened faculties of the Initiate.

The ductless glands have been aptly referred to by one knowing their spiritual significance as "interior stars," for the reason that they are correlated with the planets of our solar system. As a constellation of interior stars, the glands may be styled the Pleiades of the micro-cosm.

The Sun and Neptune rule the pineal gland; Uranus and the Moon rule the pituitary body; Jupiter, the adrenals; Mars, the gonads; Mercury, the thyroid; Venus, the thymus; the Sun, the spleen. The parathyroids respond to both Mercury and Neptune.

It will be noted that the highest spiritual planets, Neptune and Uranus, exert their influence through the spiritual head centers, the pineal and pituitary. Mercury, the messenger between gods and men, operates through the thyroid, the center which connects the personality with the Spirit. Previous reference has been made to the thyroid as the passageway between the higher and lower natures of man.

As Paracelsus has stated, "Heaven operates in us. Each star in our solar system has a special influence over an interior star."

The seven principal ductless glands are the Seven Spirits before the throne of the indwelling God. When illumined and awakened to the Spirit's bidding, man is lifted above the sphere of mortality and functions at will among the "redeemed."

The pancreas is a long, flat gland behind the liver and to the right of the spleen. It produces both an internal and external secretion. The internal, which controls the amount of sugar in the liver, is termed insulin; the extract which acts upon the starches in the intestines is the pancreatic juice. Excessive sugar taken in the body produces too much strain upon the insulin supply of the pancreas and oftentimes diabetes is the result.

The pancreas, together with the liver, is under the rulership of Jupiter.

There is a close and harmonious relationship between

the secretions of the pancreas and the adrenals, the latter also coming under the expansive rays of Jupiter. An affliction from Jupiter restricts this interaction, with untoward effects upon both the physical and emotional natures.

The stimulating and molding forces of the great starry Hierarchies are active in every phase of human development on all planes of being.

The powers of Aries-Libra, focussing through the pineal center, accelerate the purification of desire and its transmutation, which then tend to awaken the effulgence of the pineal gland or third eye, the principal spiritualized organ of the head.

The pituitary controls the growth and form of the skeleton. The forces of Taurus-Scorpio lay the foundation of this work, Taurus bearing the celestial pattern and Scorpio (the Lords of Form) reproducing that pattern in material form.

The Lords of Gemini and Sagittarius center the dual powers of polarity through Mercury upon the thyroid and the parathyroid glands.

The thymus is the gland of mother-love and sustenance. It is here that the spiritual forces of Cancer-Capricorn concentrate. The sustaining and protecting powers of Cancer are encircled by the hardening and restricting forces of Capricorn. Thus the outer shell is formed to protect the interior Cancer force which is developing within.

The Lords of Leo, the Hierarchy of Spiritual Fire, and of Aquarius, the Lords of Spiritual Air, infuse the etheric spleen with their vibrant life. Under Aquarius new Sun rhythms will be contacted which will extend incredibly the present life span.

The gonads respond to Virgo-Pisces in higher life and to Taurus-Scorpio in lower. The masses respond to the lower sense impulses of Scorpio and Taurus; the regenerate respond to the purity of Virgo and the chaste Neptunian ray of Pisces. The gonadic force must be lifted in order to unite with the pineal gland and pituitary

body in the intricate processes of the Mystic Marriage.

The adrenals, the glands of body balance, responded in their early inception to Libra-Aries. In the spiritual transmutation of the body, secretions generated by the emotions must become the equilibrating, harmonizing forces of new regenerate life. The old Adam man must become the new or resurrected Christed Man.

#### THE DUCTLESS GLANDS AND THEIR PART IN THE MYSTIC MARRIAGE

The seven most important centers of the ganglionic system are represented in John's Revelation by the seven churches. The physical body is a crystallization of the inner or invisible bodies, and the ductless glands are the special centers or channels through which higher spiritual forces must pass into the dense vehicles. As previously noted, the four glands located in the trunk of the body are the expressions of the personality; the two in the head are expressions of the Spirit; the thyroid in the throat is the bridge between the group below and the pair above.

The regenerative processes through which the personality of man must pass are described in Revelation in the messages to the seven churches. The same work is given in the Seven-Ray Formula of the Mystic Marriage ascribed to the founder of the Brotherhood of the Rosy Cross, who bore the symbolical name of Frater CRC. As man progresses spiritually the ductless glands will become a most important study for illumined anatomists. They are veritable shining mileposts marking the path to human regeneration. "What I say unto the churches, I say unto all, Watch!"

The endocrine glands are the "open sesame" to hitherto locked gates leading into unexplored fields of God's great domain of Life and its wonder working in man's bodies, visible and invisible. Only as one's mind broadens and his five limited senses begin to comprehend something of the wonders of Spirit and its composite projection—



the multiple interpenetrating bodies of man—can one understand the full significance of Paul's words when he said: "Eye hath not seen and ear hath not heard the wonders which God hath prepared for them that love Him."

The pineal gland contains a fluid or life essence which, in the process of regeneration, becomes a living light, illuminating the body from within so there is no necessity for the outer light of Moon and stars, as St. John states in Revelation. In the death processes this pineal fluid crystallizes into a sand-like substance familiar to material science. Its investigations being confined to the domain of the tangible world, it does not accept occult findings in regard to the higher phase of pineal activity.

The biblical parable of the house built upon sands, which the waves may destroy, applies physiologically to the pineal gland of average man who lives an ordinary sensual, materialistically limited life. When, through spiritual culture, the pineal essence is transformed into a living light substance, it is like unto the house founded upon rock, which neither wind nor wave has power to shake from its foundation.

As the seven glandular centers of power in the body of man are awakened by pure and holy living, they become luminous by reason of a spiritual current which passes through the body and augments the spiritual life force as it is lifted to the head.

It is in this process of overcoming, so frequently alluded to in Revelation, that the sleeping serpentine fire within the spinal canal is awakened and begins its ascent to the head as a stream of golden light. The serpentine fire is as subtle as the serpent from which it takes its name, changing in color and increasing in luminosity as spirituality unfolds. It is tinged with an ethereal ray of blue, pink or green, in accordance with the characteristic note of the aspirant's temperament. Where the development is primarily through the mentality, the ray is blue; through the heart, pink; through service, green. Only a small por-

tion of this spirit essence passes into the fourth ventricle in the head where it becomes yet more ethereal, a heavenly manna, the mystic bread served at the marriage feast. There the bride and groom are the pineal and pituitary organs, and the third ventricle is the bridal chamber or Hall of Initiation where the new Christed consciousness is later born.

The golden glory which floods the third ventricle gradually overflows and encircles the head, and eventually the entire body, with the luminous halo or aura of the Saint or Initiate who "walks in the light." When this light has been attained by humanity, we shall all know fellowship, one with another.

From certain glands concerned with generation is secreted a small amount of oil. As emotions become purer, this oil tends to increase, both in potency and volume. Then the atomic vibratory rate of the entire human organism is lifted and mental poise is achieved. Gradually, poverty and lack on all planes disappear, along with their familiar attendants, fear and selfishness.

This secretion is the "fixed oil" of the alchemists. It has been known by many names in various Schools down through the ages. It is the great transformer on all planes of being, yet its effect is always the same. The body is the land and in regeneration this oily substance becomes its means of illumination.

The Foolish Virgins of the Bible represent those who live in so unwise a manner that this oil is wasted and is, therefore, unavailable for regenerative purposes. Hence they are unfortunately "asleep" when the Bridegroom comes, unaware that the doors to the marriage feast have been unbarred.

The Wise Virgins are those who live so that this oil is conserved and becomes luminous. They keep their lamps trimmed and burning. Thus they are prepared to meet the Bridegroom and with Him to enter joyfully the sacred precincts of spirit, there to partake of the royal marriage feast.

## Chapter X

### *The Desire Body*

In the seventh chapter of this book it was observed that since ethers at the threshold of the ordinarily perceived Physical World are simply a rarefied condition of matter, but slight physical development is required for their investigation. In fact, thousands of people who have given no special thought to either psychic or spiritual development have seen, and are continually seeing, one or more of them without knowing there is anything unusual about the experience. As the Aquarian Age draws near the number of persons sensitive to the finer ethers will increase year by year. Even now there are cases on record among pioneering scientists where etheric vision is momentarily opened in the course of particular investigations.

The etheric region may be designated as the atomic and sub-atomic areas of the material world. Invisible to human senses as now developed, ether is none the less a substance belonging to the Physical World, though raised to a higher vibratory octave than physical matter. This being so, it is gradually yielding up to material scientists many mysteries that for centuries have been known only to occultists.

It is quite otherwise with the Desire or Astral World. Unlike the region of the ethers, the realm of the Desire World is another plane of being. It is not just a finer gradation of matter. Actually, it is non-material; it is astral. While it flows in and through the Physical World, interpenetrating the chemical and etheric regions of the physical and constantly influencing all activities within this sphere, it is of a different nature and subject to laws other than those operating in either the Physical World or the higher worlds of mind and spirit.

Students unfamiliar with occult terminology will

have no difficulty in understanding the Desire World if they think of it as *the world of the heart's desire* or simply as the *Soul World*; for this "World" or state of consciousness corresponds to what orthodox theology describes as "hell" and/or "heaven" where the Spirit abides after physical death. The orthodox heaven is a place of inconceivable bliss, every heart's desire being fulfilled through God's infinite goodness and love. The occultist prefers to give this "place," this state of consciousness another name. It is generally known in Western Wisdom Teachings as the Desire or Astral World.

When, in later infancy, a child begins to be conscious of its environment, at first it is not aware of the substance of things. It does not realize that certain solid objects can bruise its body or that sharp objects will pierce it. Nor does it have a sense of distance. Even an adult is not able to perceive with his physical senses the atoms comprising the substance of material forms, including his own body. In a similar way, when first entering the Desire World untrained clairvoyants see its forms but not the nature of the substance of which those forms are composed. This being so, observations recorded are not uniform, some being based on clearer seeing and deeper understanding than others. This accounts for the variation in the visions of Church saints, who may be mystical Seers but not necessarily trained clairvoyants. Consequently, their conclusions are not always corroborated by the findings of occult scientists who have made a study of that world.

The Desire World is composed of what may best be described as *force-matter*. Unlike ether, desire substance is not just a finer gradation of chemical matter. Physical instruments cannot penetrate its secrets. It is the world of life, feeling, emotion. As our bodies with their physiological functions consist of material substance, so our feelings, sensations, and emotions assume tangible form in the force-matter of the Desire World, each type having its own particular form, color, and rate of vibration. It is not incorrect to say that the emotional states of mankind

combine to form a globe-encircling, globe-penetrating "cloud" or "aura" which, in every sense of the word, constitutes a world of its own.

The Desire World is not a space-time realm. It belongs to what mathematicians call the "fourth dimension;" and the aura, the feeling body, is in fact a fourth dimensional body. Its senses (sensations) are, by its very nature, keener than those known to man when in a physical body—as is evidenced, for example, by the ecstasy accompanying that soul-transporting experience known as Illumination.

The force-matter of the Desire World is in continuous motion, pulsating in a brilliant kaleidoscopic array of ever-changing lights and colors. Its basic "substance" is *soul light*, out of which everything is formed. Where soul light is either partly or completely absent there exists the condition spoken of in the Bible as "outer darkness," where dwells unregenerate Spirits until purged of the base elements in their natures. This is the purgatorial region of Catholic theology, the hell of Protestant orthodoxy.

Force-matter or basic soul light is both positive and negative, masculine and feminine, in function. The term *fire* and *water* as applied to the masculine and feminine principles, respectively, derive from the Desire World—for here the masculine qualities now manifest in fiery, glittering radiations familiar to every Seer, while feminine soul qualities are visible as most exquisite colors seen in clouds of light having a distinctly watery appearance, a water such as no one on earth sees with physical vision. As evolution advances feminine souls display more and more of the fiery masculine qualities, while masculine souls take on the ethereal beauty of the feminine.

In our present state of unfoldment desire is the main-spring of action. It motivates our conduct and thought. Such being the case, angelic Beings inhabiting the Desire World are of prime importance to our development.

The dominant laws of the Desire World are those of Attraction, Metamorphosis, and Transformation. Added to these is the Law of Repulsion, the force of hate and self-

assertion that prevails on lowest levels of this world. Fairy tales are beautiful illustrations of the ever-changing substance of this realm, where form is not fixed as in the Physical World but constantly metamorphosizing.

The Desire World is the home of innumerable Beings who operate in divers subtle ways to influence man by means of his desires and emotions. Their activities are sensed but their presence is unperceived by the vast majority of people. To the activities of these denizens of that realm man owes his inestimable opportunity for growth through experience, by which he is building increasing moral strength and beauty and achieving mental vivification—for in our present stage of development the average man's mind is but dimly awakened.

As previously stated, the principal element of the Desire World is soul-light, the chief function of which is transmutation (metamorphosis). It is readily amenable to the power of thought. Both the Archangels (Hierarchy of Capricorn) and the Angels (Hierarchy of Aquarius) are active in the higher heavenly region of this world, whereas the Lucifers have charge of the lower purgatorial levels. The Lucifers' activities, however, are not confined to these levels but are now extending into the heaven realms as well.

How the two divisions of the Desire World, the higher planes where the force of Attraction holds sway and the lower where the force of Repulsion is dominant, are related to human experiences and the manner in which they operate are the subject of this lesson.

Man is a free agent. He can revel in unbridled passion (low desire); he can elect to live, as do the majority, by drawing to himself proportionate amounts of both high and low desire substance; he can follow the spiritual path, as do true aspirants, and thereby lay hold of transmuting, transforming powers having their source in the higher planes of the Desire World. In these higher planes is the Fountain of Life, the Fountain of Youth long sought for by medieval alchemists but entered only by those who give their all to the Quest.

## ACQUISITION OF THE DESIRE BODY

According to the chronology of Genesis it was the Third Creative Day, the Moon Period according to occult terminology, that certain divine Beings called Lords of Individuality (Libra) radiated from themselves the nucleus of man's archetypal desire body. The opal is ruled by Libra; if we think of the play of colors in that precious stone it will help us to remember this correlation of the Lords of Libra with work on the desire body which is opalescent in appearance.

At that stage of evolution we had not yet acquired a physical body, nor had our solar system reached its present state of density. Man's body and surroundings had "descended" only to the etheric level. Any indication of chemical elements making up the present physical world would have been sub-atomic and discernible only by instruments, such as the most delicate of modern science, and by the most abstruse mathematical calculations. It was nothing more than a magnetic field of life, visible to inner senses at the close of the Period as a sphere of "fire-fog" and definitely "watery" in appearance.

The germinal desire body was a thought form. This filmy vehicle has not yet fully assumed the pattern and symmetry of a human being but appears somewhat similar to a luminous ovoid or sheath of color surrounding the physical body and projecting several inches beyond it. As before noted, desire substance sparkles and radiates light and color in continuous motion. The colors and movements vary according to the emotion which is dominant, or with the prevailing sensation. Thus, passions and desires are mirrored therein with accuracy. In primitive or undeveloped persons, where the nature tends largely toward gratification of the physical senses, the desire body appears to be smoldering. This smoldering effect is varied by heavy dull colors—predominantly dark red, dull brown, and muddy green, with splashes of grey and black—and is practically static. Intense feeling will give rise to momen-

tary flashes of these colors, but with the passing of excitation they lapse into their former smoldering state.

By the time that early humanity received from the Lords of Mind (Hierarchy of Sagittarius) the germinal mind pattern, powers of the desire body had become so strong and powerful that they utterly controlled the emerging mind. The long and arduous task of evolution has been to free the human mind from domination by desire that it may become the instrument of spirit. There is now a small minority which is guided by reason and some few rare individuals who are led by the Spirit, but the masses are still largely controlled by desire.

The struggle between the lower animal desire and the Spirit is clearly apparent in the Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde type of dual personality which so often baffles psychologists. But anyone able to study the finer vehicles of man may observe and tabulate the actions and reactions of both upon the body-self of an individual.

When work on the human desire body was started in the Moon Period the field of evolution was charged with a slow red current, the fundamental color tone of all desire and all stimulating activity from the lowest to the highest. This charge enabled the Lords of Individuality to arouse a psychic activity in man that remains with him in the red blood coursing through his arteries. Also, this color was used by the Lucifers to entice early humans into sense realms. A variety of the scarlet-flame color is still characteristic of war hysteria and sensuality, and is the actual substance of so-called "hell-fire." It is the color vibration of the planet Mars and the star Antares in Scorpio. But when this deepens to the glowing brilliance of the Ruby Soul, the person enters upon a phase of transmutation belonging to the higher functioning of the Soul World.

In the case of an average person who desires to live according to his highest impulses, but whose interests are centered largely in his personal life, the colors visible in his desire body are more varied and volatile. Red has been superseded by green as the dominant vibration, although



a certain tone of dark green signifies selfishness. The red tones have become lighter and brighter, with modulations of pink. Yellows and blues may appear, and there is usually much grey (fear) in the average aura. Desire is separative in tendency. So long as the human race is animated by selfishness it will be coerced by fear inspired by self-interest.

The desire body is destined to be a vehicle of such light, color, and beauty as beggars description. Responsive to the slightest impact of spirit, sensitive to the most ethereal radiations from cosmic space, it will be a most efficient instrument of creation.

In the Earth Period various centers or vortices of light and color appeared in this body of light. These are usually seen in or about the head of a person. In those who are developed spiritually they may be seen in other parts of the body—not, indeed, within the body, but at points in the area corresponding to definite parts of the body. The usual tabulation lists seven principal centers corresponding to the seven planets of the Ptolemaic system: five planets, Sun and Moon. It is more accurate, however, to list twelve, number of the zodiacal constellations. While these are the most developed centers, investigators familiar with both occidental and oriental records maintain that in addition to the primary seven there are twenty-one minor centers, and forty-nine others in addition to these twenty-one. This accounts for the fact that various teachers give different listings.

It may be noted in passing that certain modes of meditation develop certain chains of interacting centers in the more subtle vehicles.

Antagonistic forces in nature and in man are usually considered "evil" because they are the cause of destructive reactions. But occultists declare there is a cosmic Law which is all good; so long as harmonious relationship with that Law exists there can be no manifestations of a negative or harmful character. More than three centuries before Christ, Plato affirmed: "There is in matter a blind

refractory force which resists the will of the Great Artificer." In Christianity this resistant force is identified as Satan (Satan) or the Devil (Mars).

In the Book of Job is found one of the most magnificent portrayals in all literature of the unhindered operation of the Saturnian force and the final effects of its control and transformation into good. Because mankind has not yet learned, as did Job, to work *with* Saturn, disease, poverty, and death are regarded as the besetting evils of this earthly existence. They are truly rampant in the world and have caused our planet to be named "the dark orb" and "the sorrowful star." St. Paul summed up the important work outlined in the Book of Job tersely: "Be not overcome with evil, but overcome evil with good."

An analytical study of Job will reveal that the operations of Satan (Saturn) are not inherently malefic. Their purpose is disciplinary. It was Job's failure to comprehend this fact in the beginning that caused his downfall. By learning to work with this force and to direct it constructively rather than destructively, he was reinstated in the midst of All Good and given "tenfold more than he possessed before." The story of Job is the story of Everyman. The happy, opulent, and successful Job is the ideal of attainment for all mankind.

Evil results from the inharmonious interactions of duality under the Law of Opposites. Perfect harmony can be produced only through the harmonious action and reaction of contraries, or opposing forces. Properly understood, darkness is indispensable to light; and for this reason it is good, not evil.

In his Edenic state man was an automaton, guided and directed by Messengers of Light. He possessed no incentive for independent growth. When he received the germ of mind with its separative tendency, and this mind was joined to his desire body, already grown strong, the long struggle began between his lower and higher natures: between spirit and matter, between light and darkness. Thus it was that so-called evil entered the life of hu-

manity. Religion portrays this crisis in man's evolutionary journey as the "Fall." At this time he did, indeed, lose "heaven," for his lower desire nature predominated and shut his consciousness away from its source.

However, when thus shut away from the "Father's House" the Ego awakened and began to assert itself. Then began its long pilgrimage home, as described in the Parable of the Prodigal Son. This pilgrimage began with Adam and Eve (early Lemurian man) and will continue until every human Ego has gained reunion with the Father through development of its Christed nature.

Evil is therefore impermanent. In reality, it is the spur of pain, the whiplash of a divine discontent, that drives Everyman away from the "foreign country" of materialism and back to the Father's house, where he comes to know himself as a god and "goes no more out."

In Persian mysticism it is said that Ahriman (darkness) is but the insubstantial reflection of Ahura-mazda (Light). This ancient doctrine was later incorporated in the Sufi teachings as the Law of Opposites, Sufi Masters saying that things can be known only through their opposites and that being must therefore be known through its reflection in not-being. They then regarded evil as a phase of Not-being in that it had no real existence of its own. Mary Baker Eddy's statement that evil is the "suppositional opposite" of Good conveys the same idea.

God is Spirit, eternal, All Good. He can be reached and known only by means of spiritual attainment. Man was created in the image and likeness of God, but by linking his mind with desire instead of uniting it with spirit, he fell from his high estate. He may rise again, however, by following the teachings of wisdom and striving against evil—*the existence of which has been permitted that man may exercise his free will and thus cultivate discrimination*. Sorrow, pain and evil are part of a beneficent plan, the ultimate goal of which is perfection.

Inherently, man is a free, intelligent being. That he may become fully conscious of his divine creative power he

must learn to discriminate between right and wrong, between good and evil, and exercise his own indwelling godhood by right choices. His present heritage of disease, poverty, and death is the result of his having violated cosmic Law. As he brings his life into conformity with that Law he will rise above these limitations. It is no longer considered an indication of spirituality to be weak and ailing, to be poverty stricken or miserable. "All that the Father hath is mine." declared the Christ. And in these words he revealed the plenitude that is man's when he lives true to divine Law.

Fear is a powerful negative emotion that so affects the desire body it reacts adversely on the whole human organism. The liver is particularly subject to this adverse influence because it is the organ that links the desire body to the physical. Children, being highly receptive to harrowing impressions, should be protected as far as possible from fears of every type. In this connection, the responsibility of parents, teachers, and nurses toward their charges is far greater than they usually realize. Instilling fear thoughts in the subconscious mind of a child, threats of punishment, or relating lurid horror-stories, results in injuries that will endure throughout the whole lifetime of the individual. The effects of fear on a highly imaginative youngster, or one of a nervous, excitable temperament, is especially serious. Children born under Pisces or Cancer are most susceptible to such emotional disturbances. The karmic debt incurred by those who contribute to a child's fear psychosis must be paid, in some cases in the form of a broken body, shattered nerves, or a weakened mind.

There is a long period of evolution behind the emotion of fear. "Fear came into the world with the dawn of life, and man, as well as every other living creature, has inherited it down through all the ages of existence," writes Dr. Stanley G. Hall, psychologist. "The brain of man is divided into two parts, the old and the new, the cerebellum and the cerebrum. The latter . . . the seat of intellect . . . is the new brain and the former, the cerebel-

lum, is the old brain. Here are stored all of man's primitive and animal instincts, of which fear is one. Fear paralyzes the intellect and awakens and lets loose all dormant powers of the old brain, which explains why it is not possible to tell what a man may do when he is thoroughly frightened. This accounts for his animal-like actions under fear . . . Sometimes in excesses he becomes insane and sometimes even dies."

All this is consonant with the findings of occultists. They understand that the cerebellum is the "old brain." That is, it has been in evolution longer than the forebrain, the cerebrum. As the directive center of the sympathetic nervous system, the "old brain" traces its evolutionary history to the Moon Period, the Third Creative Day of Earth's evolution. It was not until the initial phase of development in the present Earth Period (technically, the Saturn Revolution) that the first impulse was given for building the frontal area of the brain. At that time the nervous system first worked into the twofold division now known as the voluntary and sympathetic systems. Thus, the voluntary nervous system originated in the Earth Period; the sympathetic system in the Moon Period. It was not until the Lemurian Epoch of the Earth Period that the voluntary system was worked upon by Lucifer Angels and the Lords of Mind until the brain developed into something like its present form. And not until that time did the human body become really human.

The previously discussed sense centers of the desire body made their first appearance during our present Earth Period—which accounts for the special connection between these centers and the development of the physical senses, the brain and nervous system being the "highest expression of the desire body." Where there is now a nerve there was once only a *desire current*. Our nerves transmit pictures from the outside world, but in the creative work of imagination it is the blood that carries the pictures. This fact, not generally known to students, is of great importance in the alchemical processes of spiritual development.

Fear was the spur that awakened Lemurian man to the existence of the outer world. In primitive man it was aroused primarily through the operations of Nature, then violent and cataclysmic in its manifestation of storms, volcanic eruptions, cyclones, earthquakes, and other disturbances. Humanity was then sufficiently clairvoyant to see mighty elemental forces on the inner planes. From man's efforts to propitiate them arose various forms of religious ceremonials; also the medicine man and the priest. The first places of worship were huts erected over the graves of chieftains.

Primitive tribes now located in many areas of the earth stupefy themselves with drug-bearing leaves to produce more vivid clairvoyance than they ordinarily experience. By this means they have become aware of the fact that individuals possess *doubles* which function apart from their physical bodies during hours of sleep, and separate permanently from them at death. "All men's shadows wander at night," they declare. Propitiation of the shadows they see connected to all creatures, both human and animal, has led to elaborate rituals that are in part love offerings to "good" spirits and fear tributes to those considered as "evil." Thus since the dawn of human evolution man has been aware of two conflicting forces, one beneficent and the other malevolent; that is, gods and devils. His superstitions and terrors have been cultivated or allayed in exact ratio to his understanding of those forces; and this has been in proportion to the sincerity and wisdom, or the dishonesty and ignorance, of his priests and leaders.

History has no record of a primitive race lacking a system of demonology and corresponding propitiatory rituals. Any religion, whether ancient or modern, that teaches demonology to its followers is a religion of fear, not of love. Such teaching has been widespread for so many centuries that fear has come to be recognized in this day as the worst disease of civilization.

The cerebellum, or "old brain," is located at the back of the head before and above the medulla. Through it dis-

carnate entities influence those whom they wish to victimize. Obsession was the most common disease known to man so long as he functioned primarily through that negative, or feminine, center and its complementary sympathetic nervous system.

In the present Earth Day (Fourth of the Septenary Cycle) man began a new era of evolutionary development in preparation for a higher phase of spiritual cognition. The initial work of this Day has been evolving the "new brain," the cerebrum which is located in the front part of the skull. As already noted, it is the seat of intellect, the center of the conscious and reasoning mind and its concomitant cerebro-spinal nervous system. This is the most important human development to date.

During this Fourth Creative Day (Earth Period) humanity has been given a new type of religion, one wherein love supersedes fear. All fear religions had their place in primeval eras, but that time is past and their work is completed. A return to the superstitious, fear-engendering ways of ancient worship would be retrogression and devolution. With the Christ's entry upon the scene a new force flowed into the desire body of man, a force that carries the powers of two celestial Hierarchies: the Lords of Individuality (Libra) and the Hierarchy of Capricorn (Archangels).

Astrologically, Libra is the sign ruling discrimination and its symbol is the Balance, or Scales. The Lords of Individuality bestowed upon infant humanity the germ of the desire body, and in our present Earth Period the Archangels are most active in the fiery desire stuff. Therefore, man's desire body is composed of purer substance than it was prior to Christ's coming. As the archangelic forces continue to play through these desire bodies they are stimulated to renewed activity by the fiery emanations. In this way man has been so liberated from racial karma that he is free to choose his own path without hindrance by the swarms of elementals that enslaved the ancient world. The archetypal pattern for the race is now set to love, not

to fear. But many have preferred to follow the desires of the flesh, so that disease, poverty, and death, together with divers attending fears have been humanity's intimates when they might have companioned with the soul forces of unity, abundance, and immortality.

While their desire natures were strong and their minds were weak, men could be governed only by fear. The Ten Commandments were their foremost manual of religion, the keynote of which was expressed in the statement "Fear is the beginning of wisdom"—although the word fear as used in the Bible implies reverence as well. By this time we should have finished the religious fear cycle but we have not done so, and this sad failure has left its distinct mark upon the desire bodies of the race. This is shown by the slowing down of the desire currents, from which originate many present-day diseases and an increasing number of mental and nervous breakdowns. Never have mental institutions been so crowded. A detailed, analytical study of various emotional complexes has brought many physicians and their patients to the very door opening upon occult realms. Congenial occupation or service rendered in love and selflessness is a panacea for ills suffered in the desire body—ills which, if not checked, can lead to serious moral and physical afflictions.

Elemental spirits have not yet developed to the point where they can respond to more than a single tone, and their one tone may be either sorrowful or joyful. The sorrowful tone is in a minor key corresponding to the vibratory note of fear, worry, or the like. When such a note is sounded an elemental spirit attuned to that particular minor key is attracted and embodies itself in the originating negative thought. From then on it lives and feeds on every similar thought and attracts other people's related thoughts until its host's whole aura is affected. While these elemental-ensouled thoughts may not be seen their influence is great, since everything and every one are viewed through the atmosphere they create.

An individual so afflicted radiates pessimism and dis-



trust. He is eventually encased in a steel gray aura and is the most difficult of all patients to heal, whether treatment be by materia medica or spiritual therapeutics. There is, however, one power that can penetrate this aura and, operating in and through the life of the sufferer, can even effect a cure. *That power is love.*

When such an unfortunate is freed from his physical body at death he is confronted by the fearful shapes he himself created during his earthly sojourn. Those newly released are often frantic with terror until fright arouses the necessary courage to put these elementals to rout. So long as they are feared they have dominion; when fear is replaced by confidence, by self-assurance, negative forces are compelled to yield up their power and free the Ego.

The foregoing explains the terrible tests and ugly experiences undergone by neophytes, as described in occult novels. As the neophyte develops extended vision and inner planes unfold before him, he is confronted with self-created lower astral forms. If he does not recognize them for what they are, or has not developed strength and courage with which to meet them, he fails the test. On the other hand, if he can confront them with understanding and determination, he is their master and as such is qualified to take the next step on the Path.

Astral elements of man's making are really thought-forms charged with desire substance. They are less substantial than the air about us and can be instantly dispelled by the exercise of will power. Not until they are overcome is the Ego free to ascend to higher levels—a truth beautifully exemplified in Wagner's version of *Siegfried*. When this valiant Spirit has slain the dragon he is able to climb the mountain and penetrate the engirdling fire separating him from Brunhilde (Truth), the subject of his great quest.

Fear is the chief deterrent to an aspirant's ability to serve on inner planes as a conscious Invisible Helper. Not infrequently it bars entrance to the place or person most in need of help, and tends to draw a serving Ego back

into its body. In treading the upward Path every Spirit must pass through the lowest regions of the Desire World (Purgatory) where human and subhuman Spirits of the most undesirable nature are congregated to await cleansing and correction prior to liberation. They are the earthbound, the suicides whose natural term of life has not yet expired, and elementals of various types. Only the fearless can enter this realm and remain immune to all these evil influences.

Fear arises from a false sense of separateness. To the degree that we realize our essential unity with God—of whom we are a part and in whom we literally live, move, and have our being—are we free from fear. Being one in consciousness with God (Good) identifies us with the whole, thus leaving nothing in separateness from which ill can come. Contemplation of positive qualities of character, together with a persistent cultivation of confidence and courage, will ultimately lead to a conquest of all fear. Affirmative statements of virtues desired may be of help.

Soul attributes of faith and love are represented by John and Peter, the two foremost Disciples. The noblest healing work recorded in the New Testament is accomplished in their presence. Cultivation of faith and love is of the utmost importance. If we persist in our efforts to develop these virtues in the face of fear and discouragement, the day will come when we will know beyond all question of a doubt that “perfect love casteth out fear” and reveals the secret door opening upon Liberation.

There are persons who have surrendered themselves so completely to evil and degenerate practices that they have temporarily silenced the voice of their higher nature. They are so cut off from the promptings of their spirit-selves they actually find satisfaction only in giving free rein to their baser desires. Such often become sadists, taking pleasure in inflicting pain on others. If they continue their fiendish and immoral practices over prolonged periods, the higher and lower ethers composing their vital bodies will become so firmly interlocked that they will not separate at death, as they do under normal conditions.

Then no part of the vital body gravitates back to the dense body, where ordinarily the two lower ethers disintegrate with the physical vehicle. Instead, they remain attached to the higher, thus preventing the latter from going forward with its natural progression on higher planes. These are some of the facts that account for earthbound Spirits remaining in our immediate environment for longer or shorter periods after death.

As the vital body may become so set as to lose freedom for rising into higher realms of the spiritual world, so may a like fate overtake the desire body. The astral vehicle may become so heavily laden with earthly impulses that it is unable to rise to its proper level when freed from the physical body at death. Cruelty, hate, vindictiveness, lust, and similar thoughts and emotions harden the vital body, while all negative, selfish, or destructive emotions harden the desire body.

#### THE EARTH-BOUND OR SIN BODY

When the vital and desire bodies become interlocked in the grip of their baser, unyielding substance, they form what is known in occultism as the *sin body*. It is this that becomes earth-bound. That is, it is bound by its own nature and desires to the physical plane. The Ego then misses its normal purgation immediately following release from the physical body, as is the divine beneficent plan. If this were to take place in one whose vital and desire bodies are sin-locked, the Ego's torture would be past endurance. The necessary separation between the evil built into such a body and the Spirit inherent therein does not take place, therefore, until after a longer or shorter lapse of time, during which the evil condition is generally "worn down."

The "sin body" of an earthbound entity stays close to the earth plane for a period varying with conditions, and it clings like a leech to persons and places where it can feed on the heavy, noxious emanations of liquor, tobacco, blood, and all "foul and pestilential vapors" that arise

from these contacts. In extreme cases an earthbound entity has been known to hover for centuries about haunts where-to its evil deeds have linked it. These are the "ghosts" that haunt places, and some ghosts have become historic through their long association with ancient castles and famous old estates.

At the dawn of the Christian era the Earth was literally haunted by large numbers of Egos held captive in their sin bodies. They were the cause of the obsessions and of many bodily ills encountered by the Christ in His healing ministry. What He did for individuals so afflicted while He ministered in the flesh He has continued to do cosmically for humanity as a whole. The influence He releases into our planetary sphere is of such a redemptive character that it has gradually lessened malefic conditions of both outer and inner planes, thus reducing the number of Egos held in bondage.

Two factors make it difficult for an earthbound Spirit to return to normal. The first has to do with its life in a physical body; the second with its life after leaving the physical plane. In the former instance the evil far outweighs the good; hence, elements of immortality for building into the soul are lacking. In the latter instance the conscience is undeveloped because of the absence of purgation out of which conscience evolves.

Evil, like good, "grows by what it feeds on," so the tendency is for evil to grow increasingly worse and for good to grow progressively better. Unless some drastic experiences intervene to stay and alter the downward course, one given over to evil reaches the point of severance between his personality and its higher egoic counterpart. He literally becomes a soulless, conscienceless creature capable of unbelievably cold blooded and fiendish crimes. He will be completely unemotional and without any indication of remorse during the re-enactment of a most hideous offense. The fact is that he has no feeling about it, his emotions having been dulled by the hardening of his desire body. They are no longer fluidic and responsive to

emotional impacts. Such persons are the most dangerous of all types of criminals and the hardest to control.

Modern psychology has gone far in exploring physical conditions underlying abnormal behavior as described, and has developed scientific techniques for assisting such persons to return to normalcy. When scientific psychiatry effectively supplements the best of medical practice, the two conjoined will come into enlightened spiritual understanding. Then we shall have a beneficent healing ministry under practitioners who are in very truth priest-physicians—enlightened ones who will treat patients not merely as physical bodies, nor yet as physical-emotional-mental mechanisms, but as Spirits possessing several vehicles of expression. These scientific-spiritual healers will look upon ailing man as a spiritual being in a physical body and minister to him accordingly.

Comparatively speaking, evil's reign on earth will soon end. Consequently, the Black Brothers are using every wile to bring under their control all who can be influenced by them. Their aim is to wreak as much havoc and spread as much dissension as possible in the time left. They are the main instigators of evil manifest in the world today, war being one form of it. They must have food to sustain them, else they starve and die. They survive and wax strong on energies generated by hate, treachery, greed, envy, cruelty, and every demoniac deed in the calendar of crime. Hence, all who indulge in destructive thoughts, feelings, or actions are furnishing them with sustenance, and this carries a tremendous karmic debt.

Instead of transmuting darkness into light as does the White Brotherhood, the Black Brothers seek to increase evil with a view to over-balancing the power of good. To further their objective they secure the aid of elementals and discarnate Spirits of a low order who are amenable to engaging in the required vicious practices. These provocateurs gather in liquor joints, gambling dens, houses of iniquity, slaughter pens and like places, where they feed on the sordid emanations and try to gain control of their

operators and those who frequent them, instigating responsiveness to over-indulgence that leads to crime. It is no exaggeration to say that entrance into a saloon or brothel is often the first step on the road to ruin, because sinister projections from the other side of the veil are more powerful than influences of the physical plane.

As said before, the Black Brotherhood and those who follow in its train forfeit the benefits of after-life purgation by failing to polarize their soul bodies with forces generated by pure feeling, constructive thinking, and right action. They eventually become anomalies in evolution. Freed from the laws of birth and death, they wander through space until their very existence is a greater torture than any purgatorial experience could be. Such has been said to be the fate of Herodias who instigated the death of John the Forerunner. Her early life was prolonged indefinitely by her dark and magical arts.

Uneviable is the lot of those who fall out of line with the evolutionary progression of the life wave to which they belong. At some far future time they must join another life wave and pass through all the earlier stages of development, while at the same time retaining a consciousness of what they have lost.

The law of karma was stated by Paul: "Whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap." The *Secret Doctrine* states that karma (karman) is a word of many meanings, and that there is a special term for almost every one of its aspects. As a synonym for *sin* it denotes performance of some worldly, hence selfish, action which cannot fail to hurt someone else. Karma is action, or cause; one of its definitions is "law of ethical causation."

Both the White and Black Brotherhoods are comprised of individuals who have reached an advanced stage in the development of their inherent powers. The former use these powers in service to the world and for the betterment of mankind. The latter mis-use them for selfish ends—for example by instigating self-glorification on the part of an unwary neophyte, with a concomitant exploitation

of others. We thus see that *motivation* is the all-important difference between the two Brotherhoods. While the majority of humanity will not develop sufficiently to enter either of these groups for some lives to come, by thought, word, and act every individual is creating conditions which will sooner or later work out to place him (or her) in one or the other. That is karma, the Law of Cause and Effect. It is the power that controls and directs evolution. While it neither rewards nor punishes, it unerringly guides causes to the consummation of their inherent effects.

When the link of mind was given to man in the Earth Period, each Ego became responsible for its own acts because it then entered wholly into its vehicles and could direct them from within. It is the union of mind with the desire body that leads man into trouble and thereby stores up adverse karma which sometime, somewhere, must be liquidated. The desire body is almost pure energy forever seeking an outlet in some form of activity, good, bad, or indifferent. It is creative in nature and cannot remain dormant for a moment. If the Ego does not direct this energy into constructive channels, if it permits its mind to be ruled by desire instead of by its Spirit-self, that energy is liable to express in ways inharmonious to divine Law. The result is discord, pain, sorrow, poverty, and woe. Psychoanalysts call this desire energy *libido*, and rightly do they emphasize the dangers arising from its uncontrolled expression.

It is obvious that the material world is almost wholly a realm of effects that originate in mental and emotional conditions, so our thoughts and emotions are the main source of causation. Thoughts stir up emotions and emotions give rise to thoughts, either or both of which generally end in action of some sort. It must be emphasized, therefore, that every individual is responsible for his thoughts and feelings as well as for his acts; and an aspirant on the Path must realize that all three are of equal importance. Contrary to accepted beliefs, our thoughts and feelings are no more solely our own than are our acts

and behavior. We are responsible for them and we are also responsible for their effect upon others.

Not all our karmic debts are carried over from previous incarnations. We are setting up good or bad karmic obligations every day of our lives, and these debts sometimes fall due almost as soon as contracted. Again, one or several lives may pass before conditions are right for the payment of such obligations. Regardless of when or where, the law of cosmic justice does not deviate. But it is our prerogative to determine whether we shall pay willingly and lovingly or unwillingly and resentfully. If we choose the latter we but add to our burden; the balance can be made true only when we awaken to the necessity of obeying divine Law.

Forgiveness of sin alone exempts us from measure-for-measure payment of these obligations; not because the debt is wiped out but because forgiveness comes as the result of repentance, reform, and restitution voluntarily made. The cosmic scales are then balanced by our own will to righteousness. *We ourselves are the Law!* The record of our indebtedness is then removed from our vital body by the Recording Angels who faithfully keep score. It no longer operates as a causative factor in this or future incarnations.

There are five distinct ways in which constructive or destructive karma operates to condition mankind: through the individual, through the family, the community, the race, and the nation. Be it noted, however, that no person is ever *fated* to do wrong. Every evil act is an act of free will, committed despite the resistance of whatever conscience the person has developed in opposing such an act.

Individual negative karma is worked out as follows: one individual injures another. The former's suffering during purgatorial expiation following release from this plane brings about a realization of the wrong done and, as a rule, repentance. When both parties concerned reincarnate at the same time, the wrongdoer finds himself in a position to render service to the one he has previously



wronged. If he grasps the opportunity all is well and both persons are benefitted. If he does not he is given a second opportunity in another incarnation. If he still refuses he will later find himself in a position where he is forced by inescapable circumstances to discharge the obligation; or he himself will become the victim of someone's wrongdoing and in this way learn of the suffering he has inflicted in the first instance. He also learns that hate ceases not by hate, but can be absolved only by love and service. *Under karmic law the third life inevitably strikes an accurate balance.*

Advanced persons choose to pay off as much karma as they can during each earthly sojourn, that past debts may be liquidated as quickly as possible. The sooner this is done the sooner they are free to make more rapid progress. Weaker persons, unable to bear up under severe hardships, are given easier lives whereby they may pay their debts in small coin, so to speak. The latter are, of course, much longer in reaching final liberation. By giving to each and all whatever can be borne and no more, the great Hierarchies are steadily furthering human progress. The first are referred to in the biblical statement: "Whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth."

Family karma and individual karma are closely related. Egos do not just happen to be born into certain families. Karmic ties bring them into close relationship that old scores may be amicably adjusted and the record cleared. If the adjustment is particularly difficult an Ego may enter the same family several times in succession. Also, an advanced Ego may embody in a lower race to work for its upliftment.

So long as ill feeling exists between two persons as the result of a past relationship, the score is not settled nor the debt wiped out even though there may appear to be an amiable adjustment. "Nothing is ever settled until it is settled right." Sometimes, somewhere the old tie must be renewed and discord be resolved in love.

In the third type of karma individuals are drawn

together in communities where they may benefit from past services, or may suffer deprivation as the result of past prodigalities and lack of effort. Those who labor earnestly and sincerely for communal betterment in one life will find good prepared for them in the next.

Man has no abilities, capacities, or privileges that he has not *earned*. But he can lose that which he has merited if he does not put it to good use. The law decrees that to mis-use or abuse means to lose. Karmic law is impersonal. Being a divine Law it works with unerring justice—justice that has a quality of mercy, for no mitigating factor is ever overlooked. Browning well described its perfect operation thus: “God is Law yet God is Love.”

#### THE EVOLUTION OF CONSCIENCE

Primitive man is practically without conscience. Conscience may be defined as the *voice of the soul*; and soul is the product of evolution, the fruitage of an Ego's effort through many incarnations to assimilate experience in terms of soul growth. This growth is continuous from incarnation to incarnation, and conscience is its expression. The older and richer the soul development of an individual, the clearer the voice of conscience and the more readily he listens and acts upon its guidance. Knowing this, occultists look with compassion rather than censure on natives of younger and less evolved races who lend themselves to acts not countenanced by civilization. The more spiritual men become the more closely is their personality attuned to the admonitions of their conscience. Abraham Lincoln declared, “The only ruler I have is my conscience—and the following of God in it.”

As previously stated, conscience is acquired through suffering incident to purgatorial processes following physical death. The deeper the impress of sin the more severe must be the cleansing measures. Hence, the stronger and clearer will be the conscience related thereto; and the more insistent will be its warning voice when, in future

lives, the individual is tempted to repeat the wrongdoing. For this reason St. Paul declared that the greatest sinner becomes the greatest saint.

#### TRANSMUTATION

In his occult novel *Zanoni*, Bulwer Lytton describes a peculiar and marvelous power which he terms *Vril*, a power that could be used constructively or destructively. It is a panacea for all suffering and disease, yet it can annihilate vast armies. Occultists know that such a force does exist and that it will be available for use in the near future. It is more mysterious and more potent than the force released from the atom, but it is definitely human and has its source in the living organism of man himself.

Mention has been made of the vibrant life coursing through the Desire World. This life force has a corresponding center and flow in the human body. The fictional *Vril* will be available to every person in exact proportion to his conservation and transmutation of this life force into *soul power*. The work of transmutation is long and arduous. Poise, self-control, finding the Most High Place within, are essential first steps. Because of its untold potential for harm, all destructive impulses must be weeded out before a neophyte can be entrusted with knowledge and use of this force. Were such safeguards not taken chaos would reign in the world and pandemonium would supersede the orderly processes of creation.

Purifying the emotions from base desire is fundamental preparation for transmutation. Massed emotional rhythms exert tremendous impulses for good or ill. This is seen in mob action where a blind emotional impulse quickly gets out of control. This example gives a bare inkling of the soul power active in an awakened Initiate, who is able to unleash a current so powerful that darkness and evil are instantly dissipated. But as human beings are free agents, he may not do it until they themselves choose.

The energy-substance of the Desire World moves with

a rapidity exceeding that of light waves. That portion attracted by humanity for its evolutionary use responds in varying degrees to the influences of our sevenfold planetary chain. Among primitive men, when desire was strong and mind was weak, Saturn played a prominent role. The fear currents engendered by vast cosmic forces surrounding humanity would have congealed the currents of man's desire body had it not been for the fluidic influence of the Moon and the dynamic warring impulses of Mars which also played upon him.

Much later in the evolutionary cycle man began to learn, and is continuing to learn, to respond to the higher influences of the Sun, Venus, and Mercury. As this development proceeds humanity will be attuned increasingly to radiations of beauty, harmony, compassion, and peace.

Attainment of the future will come largely through the planetary forces of Jupiter, Uranus, and Neptune. Under their influence wars and all other destructiveness will be dissolved in the effulgent light of universal peace and brotherhood, with Love Eternal reigning upon Earth. Their benign radiation will effect a complete transmutation of emotion into soul qualities. Then perfected man, "joint heir with Christ," will prepare for His Second Coming. "He that controlleth his spirit is greater than he that taketh a city," observed a wise Initiate-king, pointing the way for all who aspire to this high attainment.

An interesting illustration of right and wrong methods of transmuting the desire nature (sense life) is given in legends about two famous Greek heroes, Orpheus and Odysseus. As the fleet of the latter came within hearing distance of beautiful sea sirens who, by their seductive music, lured all listeners to their ruin, he had wax put in the ears of the sailors and ordered himself bound to the mast so he could not free himself. This depicts dependence on externalities, which always fail in the end. Many of his sailors escaped and met death in the waves. Down through the ages men and women have sought to benumb the sense life, only to meet with disappointment or

disaster. There is only one way to transmute sense life into soul qualities and that is through the *power of spiritualized will*. This is the divine rod or staff within man himself, the staff that budded for Tannhauser and brought him absolution from sins committed under the influence of the siren Venus (lower nature).

Orpheus, the Grecian Saviour-hero, illustrates the right way. He resorted to no external props. Instead, he struck his seven-stringed lyre (the seven major spiritual centers within his body) and drowned the siren's music with his own wonderful soul harmonies—the same celestial measures he used to calm storms, make skies to clear, and flowers to bloom.

There is no limit to the powers latent within man, waiting only the master touch for vivification. Vast unexplored areas of spiritual knowledge and spiritual power are his for the taking. By veiled allusions and in parables, a hint of this opportunity has been given by the Wise of all times. It only remains for man to awaken, to accept and to demonstrate his own powers.

The first Tarot glyph typifies the state of completed transmutation. The High Priest, aura crowned, is seated upon his throne. In one hand he holds the cup of human passions. That he has gained complete mastery over them is signified by his other hand being placed over the cup. His emotional nature has become for him a "sea of glass," the sea whereon walk the redeemed in Revelation.

The Mystic Grail Cup from which the Christ drank, and which has become the communion cup of the Church, has the same esoteric significance. Some day the Church will re-discover the truths about this cup that were known to early Christians.

Desire is the great motive power of mankind. When this tremendous force is brought under the dictates of spiritualized will, man becomes superman. Any attempt to master it by human will power is a grave mistake. Sooner or later it will turn, as did the Hydra in Greek mythology, and with doubled force rend its would-be

master. Only by the power of spirit (Fire Force) can desire be transmuted into true soul attributes.

There are three principal centers within the human body temple wherein the process of transmutation may be effectively consummated. These are the three fire centers: the sacral plexus under Sagittarius; the heart center under Leo; the head center under Aries. The initial step of purification is the work of the sacral plexus, symbolized by the birth of the Christ within. By such purification the fiery currents of the desire body are brought under the domination of the Spirit.

John the Baptist announced, "He that cometh after me is mightier than I . . . he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire." The second step under Leo is to direct constructively this powerful bridled force through the heart center and into channels of love and compassion. From this heart center are born eternal masterpieces of art, science, and literature. Its energies must be used in creative activities: when rightly executed, they will inevitably bear the signature of that Light never seen on land or sea. For these energies to lie fallow or stagnate is one of the greatest tragedies of human existence.

Under Aries the head center unites the forces engendered by purification of the sacral center with the love and service of the heart center. Amalgamation of these two currents produces that dynamic spirit-force termed Vril, a force that lends itself to instantaneous healing, thought communication, levitation and other demonstrations indicative of those who have attained to mastership.

In regard to this perfective discipline, Proclus, the fifth century Greek Neo-Platonist, wrote: "Oracles teach that divine fire obliterates all stains derived from generated existence." And Marcilio Falino, the Italian Platonist, wrote: "This Fire enkindled within us is more like heaven than what is left behind. It is light incorporeal and the most powerful of all things."

## Chapter XI

### *Mind, Soul, and Spirit*

#### THE HEAD:

#### THE HOLY OF HOLIES IN THE BODY TEMPLE

*It always seems to me that the figure of a man is the best text for everything that can be said about him.—Goethe.*

In this series of anatomical studies in which we have considered the hidden or inner life of man and the wonders of his human temple, we now come to a consideration of the holy of holies of the human structure, the head, seat of the mind and the point of the indwelling Spirit of God.

With Initiate wisdom, Rudolph Steiner writes of the head as being “a store-chamber of former deeds, an image of successive metamorphoses of energies active in past lives—such is the human head.” Dr. Steiner continues to elaborate on the wonders of the head. He explains how the twelve zodiacal rays of spiritual force, which underlie the formation of the twelvefold physical body, in one earth life will set their impress upon the twelve principal nerves of the head for the following life.

The celebrated medieval seer, Paracelsus, expresses a similar truth. He writes: “There is a star behind every process going on in man. All the forces of heaven have their corresponding activity in those parts of the body that are expressive of their prayers.”

Modern science must progress far toward things of spirit before it will accept such sacred and beautiful truths—truths dealing not with the construction of form alone, but also with the great cosmic forces of spiritual life. These forces weave and interweave, uniting Spirit with body in an ever refining and illumining process

whereby the spiritual extracts of one earth life become the atoms of the Ego's next physical vehicle! Of equal or greater importance is the steadily growing acuteness of all the senses. For example, psychometry points to the further evolution of the sense of feeling; clairvoyance and clair-audience to the higher octave of seeing and hearing.

Hearing having been the first of the senses to be developed by early embryonic man, the ear is the most highly perfected of the physical sense organs. It is capable of registering outside impressions with greater accuracy than any of the other senses. The eye, though also highly developed, is, as we know, subject to many "optical illusions."

At present the human ear is capable of responding to a range of tones about eight times that possessed by even the most gifted musician. Who, therefore would presume to say that hearing the music of the spheres is a mere poetical fantasy?

Man's present optic nerve is due for an almost incredible expansion. Both the X-ray machine and motion pictures are forerunners of what the man of the future will be able to accomplish by means of extended vision. The Greek Mysteries taught these truths. The peafowl became a sacred bird to the neophyte because its many "eyed" feathers symbolized the extension of sight to the whole body.

Increased activity of the pineal and pituitary glands through finer and cleaner living will aid in the further stimulation of the five senses. Both smell and taste are intimately connected with the pituitary body.

The nerves are highly sensitized channels of spirit and may be used either to augment or to impair its expression. There is but slight understanding of the importance of the olfactory nerves in this connection. Psychiatry has discovered that man responds more quickly to odors than he does to other stimuli. Certain odors accelerate the desire body; others definitely soothe the desires and stimulate the forces of spirit.



## ODORS AND THEIR INFLUENCE

The influence of odors upon the finer vehicles has been a guarded Temple secret down through the centuries. The preparation of Temple incense was considered a holy service and was assigned only to those possessing pure hands and a clean heart.

Every voice bears its own particular odor; so also does every virtue. With the development of Initiate-consciousness is born a definite soul fragrance.

As the body of the aspirant becomes increasingly purified, all its rhythms are accelerated and harmonized until they radiate an etheric sweetness. This fragrance deepens, as it were, or grows more potent as spiritual faculties are correspondingly awakened, until eventually a specific soul fragrance accompanies the individual. In this fact lies the origin of the use of perfume, each one endeavoring to express the aspirations of his soul in a chosen scent.

## THE BRAIN, VEHICLE OF THE MIND

The brain was little understood by the ancients. The word "brain" does not occur in either the Old or the New Testaments. In Hippocrates' Collection (about 400 B. C.) there is a treatise on the "sacred disease" which deals with the brain. It includes the curious statement that among the many blood vessels supplying the brain the two largest are connected with the liver and the spleen. In the section dealing with head wounds, trepanning is very accurately and scientifically described.

An esoteric study of brain areas and their mode and time of development is most fascinating. Infants are born with both hearing and sight areas well developed. The speech center manifests much later. In obedience to a biological law, the embryo recapitulates all previous stages of evolution. Both hearing and sight antedated speech. Hearing and touch were the senses especially cultivated during the Saturn Period, or the First Creative Day of manifesta-

tion. Sight and smell were given a similar predominance during the Sun Period, or the Second Creative Day. Speech received primary emphasis during the Moon Period, or the Third Creative Day.

The speech center is located in the left brain hemisphere of right handed persons and in the right brain hemisphere of those who are left handed. If through an accident a child loses the faculty of speech, gradually a new speech area is developed in the opposite side of the brain. This is not generally true of adults. In their case the center injured may be rebuilt, but a new one is not formed.

A child's body is much more amenable to the conditioning forces of spirit than is that of an adult. The open, receptive mind of the child tends to keep his body plastic. "Ye must become as little children" has a far reaching significance, applicable to the physical body as well as to the mind and soul.

Man's brain, larger than that of any animal except the whale and elephant, is the instrument correlating with those higher faculties which set him apart from the animal kingdom. Encased within the bony structure of the skull and further protected by special membranes, the brain is nourished by an intricate ramification of blood vessels. Its power and intellectual capacity are indicated by the number and depth of the convolutions wrinkling its surface. Post mortem examinations reveal that infants have but few of these while the brains of brilliant men and women, though not necessarily larger in size, have a vastly greater number of deep convolutions.

Brain tissue is composed of delicate, sensitive, and minute cells. The brain is plaited, as it were, into very sensitive areas that correlate with man's intellectual capacities. The power of speech, the ability to write, and the capacity for listening to conversation, all belong to different areas. An injury to one controlling speech does not necessarily affect the ability to write or to understand spoken words.

In the brain of racial pioneers there is developing, near the seat of speech, a new area which will be productive of

closer communication between those living on this plane and those who dwell "beyond the veil." It will also stimulate memory of past lives.

The brain is dual-lobed, its two halves possessing bilateral symmetry. The right and left sides have a corresponding arrangement of lobes, fissures, and nerves. The blood supply differs, however, in the right and left sides according to right or left handedness. This difference has gradually come to leave its definite impress on the skull. In this connection it is interesting to note that an examination of primitive skulls has shown no discernible differences in this respect, which seems to indicate that undeveloped man was ambidextrous. Generally, the right half of the brain controls the left side of the body and the left half controls the right side.

Abraham typified the pioneers of the Fifth Root Race, the first to develop a mental equipment capable of clear, consecutive, logical thinking. After this development, Abraham was deemed ready to meet Melchisedek and to be initiated by him into the destiny of Fifth Race humanity.

The right brain hemisphere is under Mercurial guidance; the left, under Martian control. One need only to consider the chaotic and warring world of today to realize that the esoteric scientist is correct when he says that the left side of the brain (under Mars) is most active and dominates the life of mankind in general. The heart is also situated on the left side of the body; therefore, it is more submissive to the self-assertive and materialistic Martian area than to the reasoning and altruistic faculties of the Mercury-governed right hemisphere.

As the Mercurial lobe becomes increasingly active under the stimulus of Aquarian impulses, and the planet Mercury becomes correspondingly powerful in human evolution, the heart will gradually shift its position toward the center of the body and man will again begin to "think with the heart," as the Palmist admonished. Scientific thought transference will then be demonstrable by great

masses of people instead of being merely a subject for experimentation, as is usually the case at the present time.

The bridging of space, with closer and more intimate contacts established between man and man, will rapidly erase the lines that now divide nations, races, and religion. Fellowship of spirit, unity of purpose, and the benediction of a lasting peace will proclaim the end of Martian domination over our world and the inauguration of the reign of Mercury.

## THE MIND

The brain, its structure and function, have been considered in detail in the sixth chapter of this series, dealing with the two nervous systems. The brain is the vehicle through which the mind operates, but it is the mind, its organization and activities, with which we are dealing primarily at this time.

To recapitulate briefly, the initial pattern for the physical brain and cerebro-spinal nervous system was given to man in the earliest dawning of the present Earth Period—technically, the Saturn Revolution. However, it was not until the Third or Lemurian Epoch of the Fourth Revolution of this Earth Period that the brain was sufficiently evolved to become usable as a vehicle for the mind. This precious gift was bestowed upon man by the Lords of Mind (Sagittarius), those great beings who possess the ability to manipulate mental stuff as human beings use and control physical matter. This took place in the Atlantean Epoch. From that time on, the doors of infinity have been opened to man, for mind is the stairway which connects matter with spirit.

Upon receiving this priceless link with the gods, man began to comprehend the truth spoken by Christianity's supreme philosopher, Paul, when he said, "Ye are heirs and joint heirs with Christ." Unfortunately, however, Atlantean man did not elect to walk in the way of the gods but chose to follow a lower and more devious path which

plunged him into all the sorrow and woe, the disease, poverty, and death, which have prevailed in this world since his "fall" into material consciousness—or, as biblically described, his expulsion from Eden.

The desire body of Atlantean man was already strong. When he received the link of mind, instead of using it to focus the powers of spirit, he appropriated it for gratifying his desire nature. Mind is a creative agent. Wherever it is focused, there its powers will be demonstrated. Early humanity proved this to be true when, by closing the mind to spirit and opening it to sensual desire, man became adept in evil magic that eventually destroyed the entire Atlantean civilization and the very continent upon which he had his being.

In this present Fifth or Aryan Epoch humanity is just beginning to understand something of the tremendous powers of mind and how, through its creative function, every individual can literally build a new heaven and a new earth, both within and about himself. All schools working with the creative powers of mind are heralds of the new Aquarian or Air (Mind) Age—during which these latent mental faculties will be developed to a degree far beyond the imagination of the most fervent present-day idealist.

Mind is the most important servant of spirit. When men learn to disengage it from the shackles of desire and to unite it wholly with spirit, they will have the key to the Kingdom and will realize the fulfillment of the Master's promise: "Whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it to you."

It was by the power of His Name (mind linked with spirit) that the Disciples were able to accomplish so-called miracles. For this reason Paul taught his followers that the first step toward spiritual development is *the Christing of the mind*: "Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus."

The mind is man's most recently acquired vehicle and his most important one. When studied clairvoyantly it

seems filmy in appearance, almost globular in shape, and of a misty or silvery blue color. Like other inner vehicles, the mind possesses undeveloped centers which will open later and expand until man rises above the human stage to become superhuman and godlike.

The occultist tells us that the mind is in its "mineral" state of evolution. Naturally, the term is not to be taken in the ordinary sense. The "mineral" is the first stage of evolution of every life wave. The mind originated in the present Earth Period and is therefore in its first or "mineral" state. It can create *forms* but it cannot as yet create *life*, for life belongs to the second state. In the next World Period or Creative Day (technically, the Jupiter Period) the mind will be so vivified as to be capable of creating thought *forms* and endowing these forms with the *principle of growth*. In the succeeding Creative Day (Venus Period) the mind will be able to create living forms having capacity for *feeling*; and finally, at the very end of our septenary evolution (in the Vulcan Period) the mind will be able to confer the gift of *reason* upon its creatures as the Lords of Mind did for us.

Thus it is plain that the *summum bonum* of Earth evolution is that mind shall manifest fully its divine creative power. In other words, all physical creation will be accomplished by mental processes only. For example, the work now performed by the organs of generation will be assumed by the mental faculties. This means that the mind is destined to become completely spiritualized, a clear and unobstructed channel for the workings of spirit. An Immaculate Conception will then be the transcendental and common heritage of the whole race.

In its present condition the mind is formed of the "densest" of thought substance, through which the Ego expresses itself by ideation and reason. These are now the principal attributes of mind. Its "mineral" condition is responsible for the prevailing materialism with its lack of spiritual sensitiveness. To the clairvoyant the mental aura of most human beings is curiously hard and impenetrable;

the aura of the intellectualist is steely-bright with sharp blades which may be seen flashing about his head. But this represents the acme of development for "mineral" mind. Even now this type of mind is losing the place of command which it has enjoyed for so many centuries and is yielding to the more pliable type of mind that is able to reason spiritually and, therefore, is astir with fiery creative energy.

Paul, the brilliant Christian metaphysician, frequently emphasized the necessity for becoming transformed by renewing of the mind. When this transformation occurs men's minds will be literally translated from the denser substance of material thought to the finest and most attenuated essence emanating from the very realm of spirit, the home of our egoic being. With this accomplished, the transmutation of matter into spirit will have been achieved; and death, the last enemy of man, will be overcome by immortality. Ideation and reason, as we now know them, will be superseded by love and cosmic wisdom, which will thenceforth constitute the primary attributes of the illumined mind.

#### HOW MIND USES THE BRAIN

The mind, as previously stated, is the chief channel for the Spirit's manifestation in the body; and the brain is the chief channel for this operation of mind. This is accomplished through *thought*, operating either consciously through the cerebro-spinal nervous system or unconsciously through the sympathetic nervous system.

Where the work is done in full consciousness, there is always a contest with the outer objective universe by means of the cerebro-spinal nervous system, for the Ego's consciousness during life in the body is focused in its outer nature. In the image-making work of the imagination, however, pictures come not from the outer, objective universe but from the inner, subjective, spiritual universe and are carried in the blood to the brain. The pictures, as we

have called them, are "race memory" in one of its aspects, for the image-building faculty is not at present completely under the power of the will. It operates almost wholly under inspiration, an inflow from spirit, and not by reason. Hence it, too, like "memory" in the blood, operates in part through the sympathetic nervous system. When the Ego at last conquers the stronghold of the sympathetic nervous system (and this is part of the work of Initiation) the whole of race memory will be available to the imagination for use in creating or re-creating our world and, in addition, there will be the inflow of perfectly *new* ideas from spirit which have not been known upon earth before.

This makes evident the necessity for pure living and the use of clean, wholesome foods, for these leave their impress upon the blood—which is, correspondingly, a pure or an impure medium for the operation of creative thought.

We have said that "the Ego is in the blood." Hence the blood is naturally drawn in special measure to any organ or part of the body on which attention is centered. For example, when the Ego is mentally active, blood centers in the brain; after a meal it centers in the digestive organs, and so on.

The Ego and its thought, however, are not in the blood itself, but in the reflecting ether which interpenetrates the blood. This is the highest and most attenuated of the four ethers. It is called the *reflecting ether* because it reflects spirit into or upon matter; and, contrariwise, reflects the pictures of the objective universe back upon the mind to the Ego. The latter is accomplished by means of the *planetary* reflecting ether—which contains an accurate picture of everything on earth and which flows into the lungs with the magnetic impulse of the breath, thence to be impressed upon the seed atom in the heart and upon the blood stream.

When the stream of thought flows outward from the Ego to the physical vehicle, the idea becomes animated by the forces of desire, either high or low. It then passes into the etheric brain, impinging upon the physical brain and



thus leading to action. Such is the process by which an idea conceived by the Ego is brought into manifestation in the Physical World.

#### THE IMPORTANCE OF CONSTRUCTIVE THINKING

The mind is the focal instrument by which the Ego contacts spiritual forces and projects them by thought, word, and deed into the physical or objective world.

During the Third or Lemurian Epoch man built an "animal soul," the expression of his lower or animalistic instincts. This animal soul is closely linked with the desire body. The great work is to transmute these animalistic forces so they may be used by the Ego in the specifically human activities of the "threefold soul."

The tragic conditions in the world today are the result of uncontrolled desires that have held sway over peoples and nations for ages past. Mankind is now experiencing the sorrow and suffering that follow upon the mind's becoming a servant to desire. He has yet to learn what can be accomplished when the mind has become the servant of spirit and the master of desire.

It has been said that the greatest discovery of the nineteenth century is the fact that mind is creative. Present world karma is exacting what man brought into being by successive lives wherein selfish desires dominated his thought creations. No man likes the world as he observes it today, and yet *every single individual* is, to a certain degree, responsible for existing conditions. Never was there a time when so much depended upon teaching the masses the power of constructive thinking. Through destructive thinking man has charged the atmosphere with disruptive forces, and base desires have polluted the ethers. By constructive thinking and cleansed desires he can dissolve the discords and purify the ethers. This is a task he himself must accomplish.

The Spirit's hold on the mind must be made by way of the heart. *As a man thinketh in his heart, so is he.*

Thinking creates thought-forms fashioned of higher or lower mind essence in accordance with the nature of the thought. Thoughts are in reality living entities! They are composed of creative substance and embody the intelligence imparted to them by their creator. Thought-forms attract others of a similar nature; these coalesce into a composite form, growing rapidly more powerful. They react upon the body, health, affairs, and environment of everyone. *We are exactly what we think ourselves to be.* Infirmities and deformities of mind and body may thus be appraised and accounted for.

The brain mind is a comparatively recent acquisition, and when highly trained tends toward egotism. It is prone to be puffed up in its own conceit. The mind, when it becomes wedded to spirit, will receive strict training and know a development far beyond anything known to academic logicians.

The supreme evolutionary task of humanity is the spiritualization or Christing of the mind. When this occurs the mind will reflect the eternal spirit instead of the transitory outer world as at present. As a consequence, Cosmic Wisdom will irradiate human consciousness and man will be not mere man, but superman.

The *intellect* represents the chief development of the *conscious* mind; *memory*, of the *subconscious*; *intuition*, of the *superconscious*. During the first twenty-one months—three septenary cycles—of an infant's life, the consciousness is virtually dormant. In later esoteric development, the more closely the mind becomes attuned to the heart the more fully and accurately will it be able to bring buried memories into waking consciousness because it then has access to the records inscribed on the permanent seed atom in the heart.

The subconscious mind of modern psychology may be said to correlate with the Reflecting Ether of the occultist, in the limited personal sense. The Reflecting Ether within the body and aura of the individual holds the records of everything that has ever happened to him in the

current incarnation. These are also inscribed upon the seed atom of the heart, and become part of the permanent record which every Ego carries with it from life to succeeding life.

It should be noted that the planetary records which are inscribed in the planetary Reflecting Ether have a comparatively short life time. They remain strong and clear for only a few centuries, and then they fade out in spots, but important events may remain in this record for one or two thousand years. Thus contact with the Reflecting Ether may provide some knowledge of a previous incarnation if the incarnation has occurred within a few hundred years.

Max Heindel writes: "As the conscious memory of recent events which is strong in the human being gradually fades, so also the etheric record, which is the lowest aspect of the Memory of Nature, fades in time. In the highest subdivision of the Region of Concrete Thought, just on the border line between pure spirit and matter, an impress is made of the things and events in the world which is relatively much clearer and more lasting than the etheric record, for while events inscribed upon the etheric record fade away in spots in a few hundred years, and even important events may last only one or two thousand years, the record found in the highest subdivision of the Region of Concrete Thought lasts for the Earth Period. While the records made on the Reflecting Ether may be read by the uninstructed who have just a little spiritual sight, several initiations are required before it is possible for any one to read the records kept in the higher region noted above . . . Paracelsus calls the record made in the ether, Sidereal Light; and Eliphas Levi, the great Kabalist, speaks of these records as being kept in the Astral Light. This is in a sense correct, for though they have nothing to do with the stars, as the name would seem to imply, they are found in the Etheric Region outside the earth's atmosphere. The medium or hypnotic victim who leaves the body by negative processes under outside control, levitates towards

these realms as naturally as our physical body gravitates towards the earth.”

“As for the memory of past lives it is not necessary to wait until a future existence for the development of that faculty, when the spiritual sight has been cultivated, with the aid of proper teachers, such as the Elder Brothers of the Rosicrucian Order. For the neophytes are taught from the beginning to read the Memory of Nature in Order to know and differentiate between truth and delusion, first in the record that is kept in the fourth or Reflecting Ether, which requires only a very slight extension of the physical sight. Then by degrees, if they live the life and are diligent, the extension of sight is raised to the records in the archetypal regions. These are usually opened to them within a few years, and here they can easily investigate their own past. However, we do not believe that that is generally done, for no one goes so deeply into the work without becoming so absorbed in the system of service to others that he has no time to attend to his own selfish inclinations.”

A biblical instance illustrating this process is the celestial vision of Jacob. With his head upon a stone pillow, the stone of Initiation, he was enabled to study the evolutionary ladder which extends from heaven to Earth and to trace individual journeying thereon.

Initiation is the voice of the superconscious or spiritualized mind. This faculty is being developed increasingly as mind becomes a more perfect channel for the workings of spirit. Intuition is sometimes referred to as the “voice of the soul” and also as man’s “sixth sense.” This faculty will come into full expression during the Aquarian Age that we are just now approaching.

The deepest esoteric instructions are never given either by word or in writing, but are projected mentally by the Great Ones and are received in the silence by the intuitional perceptions of the neophyte who is sufficiently sensitized to make the contact.

The subconscious mind (or memory) correlates with the inner forces of the Earth and may be said to relate to

Earth life cycles of the immediate past and the present.

The conscious mind correlates with the Moon and is related to the present Earth experiences only.

The superconscious mind correlates with the Sun and produces the spiritual illumination known as Initiation, which gives the ability to read the Cosmic Records dealing with the past, present, and future.

### THOUGHT-FORMS

The subject of thought-forms is most fascinating but can be touched upon only briefly in relation to mind and its functions.

Every thought possesses form, color, and tone. The ethers about us are filled with these vari-colored forms at all times. Many persons now possess the clairvoyance necessary to discern these colors, but few have attained the clairaudience to hear or the clairsentience to see them.

One should endeavor to cultivate a firmly positive attitude of mind at all times in order to be immune to the influence of many harmful thought-forms which permeate the atmosphere everywhere. Persons not understanding this may become easily subjected to thoughts of fear, contagion, and other negative and destructive thinking being sent out into the atmosphere. A strong, positive thinker can exercise a powerful influence over a community, be it for good or ill.

The fundamental color of a thought form is determined by the nature and quality of the idea that called it into being and the desire substance that energizes it. Anyone having the ability to investigate these forms at first hand has the advantage of knowing their essential nature and of dealing with them accordingly. But since few possess this ability, the danger in them can be nullified only by the cultivation of serenity, poise, and a disciplined imagination.

Many persons, upon attempting to "go into the silence," mistakenly cultivate an empty, negative mental

state like a vacuum—to which Desire World entities are immediately attracted. This often results in serious psychic upheavals which disastrously affect both the mind and the body. There is a law of the occult world known as the *Law of Repercussion*. By it highly organized psychic energies work back, “repercuss” upon the dense body to its possible injury. In medieval times, when sorcery flourished, this was frequently demonstrated in cases where a wound inflicted upon the “werewolf”—a psychic entity—appeared upon the body of its host, the sorcerer or witch. However, the same law holds good now as then and is the explanation for the physiological disturbances caused by psychic forces.

Rightly observed, the silent time of inward contemplation is a time of concentrated spiritual activity. It then becomes the holiest hour of the day and is entered into joyously and expectantly. It is the time when the lover goes out (or up) to meet the Beloved. The Song of Solomon is a poetic description in rich oriental imagery of this spiritual adventure.

During a meditational period the mind should be held still, but positive—never negative or passively receptive to whatever may come floating by. The senses also need to be alert to contact the interior ecstasy as the entire being is bathed and irradiated by the healing downpour of pure spirit radiance.

Such an experience in the silence heals the physical body, purifies the emotions, regulates the desires and stimulates the mind, thus enabling the Ego to conquer the objective world.

A student of the inner mysteries of life and being becomes increasingly responsible for the kind of thoughts he entertains. His habitual thought not only becomes a part of him, radiating out from him either for good or for ill, but remains in the planetary ethers for a long time. Thoughts have been known to maintain their psychic pressure even after their originator has departed from this physical plane of expression. Powerful thought forms of

hatred, revenge, and murder have lingered in certain localities and exerted their baleful influence for several generations before their force was spent.

Lazy, listless fancies are seen as wisps of floating clouds. They have not been infused with enough forceful desire to make them dynamically effective. Thought-forms of love, truth, beauty, and every high aspiration or ideal, if sent forth with power and purpose, serve to cleanse, purify, heal and renew all who come in contact with them.

### THE SOUL: IN ANCIENT PHILOSOPHY

In writing of the wonders of the human body, Rudolph Steiner, the late eminent occultist, said of the brain: "Everything in all the life of ideation can be found in the structure of the brain." He added: "No one can speak adequately of the brain unless he sees in its structure an imaginative replica of the life of the soul."

It has long been a disputed question in the scientific world as to when man first discovered within his gross physical casement a divine essence that endures after the transitory physical vehicle is no more. According to scientific speculations the Cro-Magnons, who occupied the greater portion of the European continent thousands of years ago, are credited with pioneering in the knowledge that there is a part of man which endures after physical existence is ended. Evidence cited in support of this conclusion is taken from what appears to have been their peculiar burial customs. When their dead had been buried a sufficient time for the flesh to disintegrate, it seems that the bones were carefully exhumed, painted red, and then as carefully reburied. Since red has been the symbol of life and enduring vitality to people of all ages, it would appear that the Cro-Magnons were endeavoring to impart strength and energy to that part of man which survived death of the body, that part which was not consigned to the grave.

In Venezuela recent excavations of graves of an ex-

tremely ancient people give evidence of this same interment procedure, and for apparently the same reason.

On the earliest Egyptian papyri appear representations of the soul freed from the body, the soul being symbolized by a bird with the head and features of the person deceased. Ancient Grecian writers, among whom were Empedocles (480 B.C.), expressed the idea of the sacredness of the heart in relation to the soul—or, as they termed it, the *pneuma* (breath of life). This soul, they claimed, had its seat in the heart citadel of the body and could be seen rising as a shimmering stream as this organ ceased to beat.

During the third century before our Christian era, Alexandria became the important center for the study of all "Wisdom Literature," both natural and supernatural. The seat of the soul (wisdom) and the mind (understanding) was placed by the Alexandrian school in the heart. (See Ecclesiastes 7:5-6 and 16-18.) They taught the universality of the four elements as the only basis of creation, whether in its natural or supernatural aspects. The relationship of the four elements to the universe and to man, the macrocosm and the microcosm, as taught by this school is almost identical with the teaching given by our modern Wisdom Literature.

Early Hebrew writers gave the liver as the seat of life (Psalms 16.7; Proverbs 23:16). As the esotericist knows, this reference pertains to the fact that the liver is the seat of the desire body and from it arises the impulse to action.

It was, perhaps, with Aristotle (384-332 B.C.) that the theory of man's physical and spiritual correlation with the four elements received its most celebrated analysis. He held to the fundamental hypothesis of four primary and opposing elements, Fire, Earth, Air, and Water (hot-cold, dry, wet) which were linked with body, breath (soul), mind, and spirit. In our day these four elements are interestingly represented as phlegmatic, melancholy, sanguine, and choleric dispositions.



Galen (150-200 A.D.) who ranked after Hippocrates as the most famous of ancient physicians and one of the greatest biologists of all times, wrote a treatise on anatomy that was as philosophical as it was descriptive. Probably his best known work on the functions of the various parts of man's body was written in Rome while he was court physician to Emperor Marcus Aurelius, the famed and wise philosopher.

Galen's *Anatomy and Physiology* dealt with the inner as well as the outer man. He sought to justify the form and structure of all the organs with reference to the purpose which he believed they were intended to serve. His anatomical knowledge was called upon "to justify the ways of God." In other words, his aim was to demonstrate the power, wisdom, and love of God as manifest in His creation. Galen declared that the perfection of God can be traced in the body of man; that to comprehend this perfection brings man nearer to God than do the sacred Mysteries. Paul's philosophy expressed the same idea when he taught "Ye are the temple of the living God."

The Galenic philosophy maintained that the basic principle of life was a spirit or *pneuma* (breath) attracted from the world-soul in respiration. This "divine air" passed from the lungs into the left ventricle of the heart where it encountered the blood. This *pneuma* operating in the heart was termed *vital spirit*.

Another phase of the *pneuma* centered in the liver and was designated as the *natural spirit* or breath. This *natural spirit* was an alchemical transformation of the *vital spirit* which had its center in the third ventricle of the heart. A third *pneuma* was sent from the heart to the brain and was known as the *animal soul*. The blood was the "peculiar essence" or carrier of this threefold spirit force to these three body citadels—the heart, the liver, and the brain. Modern esoteric anatomists recognize these three important body centers as the receptacles for the seed atoms of the physical, desire, and mental bodies, respectively.

In many ways Galen's work gives evidence of genuine esoteric knowledge. His treatise on the nervous system contains many keys to changes operative in the nervous structure in connection with spiritual development. He gave the name *sacrum* to the small bone at the lower end of the spine which, like all occultists, he considered the most important bone in the whole body. This is truly the "sacred stone" of the body-temple, the stone the builders rejected but which shall become the cornerstone of the New Age physical temple.

Galen's influence was extensive until the era of materialistic science. His findings were closely approximated in the fifteenth century by the great Initiate painter, Leonardo da Vinci.

Da Vinci was born in Tuscany in 1452. His father was a nobleman, his mother a peasant girl. He spent his life in Florence. An aura of mysterious greatness seemed to enfold him from childhood. His most absorbing interest was anatomy and his notes of 1483 tell of his dissecting human bodies. His will bestowed upon his faithful friend Melzi his books and manuscripts, instruments, and portraits. The manuscripts were his dearest possession and included valuable anatomical works.

The heart and lungs especially engaged his interest, and his findings were notably in advance of his contemporaries. He made a very extensive study of the nervous system and his charts show all of the ventricles of the heart. His studies in physiological optics merit special notice. It was his purpose to publish a great anatomical work which would glorify God's most perfect handiwork, the human body.

Michelangelo was another profound student of anatomy but his work is characterized more by strength and originality than by the magical loveliness of Da Vinci. Like Da Vinci, however, he studied every branch of science, with the Bible and Dante as his preference among books. No artist has equalled him in grandeur of conception when drawing the human figure. He declared that painting,

which merely imitates the external appearance of bodies, is not superior to the production of any mechanical trade or employment.

Da Vinci was the first to reveal the true relationship between descriptive anatomy and art. It has been said that he and Michelangelo were the best anatomists of their day and that, in consequence thereof, they were also the best artists.

#### THE SOUL IN WESTERN WISDOM LITERATURE

We have mentioned in former studies that a distinction is made in Spiritual Science between the *soul* and the *Spirit* or *Ego* of man. In common usage these terms are interchanged because of a lack of that deeper esoteric knowledge which reveals their distinction. The *Ego* is a projection of the immortal *Virgin Spirit* made in the image and likeness of God. The *soul* is the product of evolution. We have much or little soul in accordance with the use we have made of our opportunities here on the planet Earth. The development of the soul could not begin until man received mind, which was the gift of the Lords of Mind to the masses in the Atlantean Epoch and to pioneers in the Lemurian Epoch. Thus the pioneer who received the link of mind in the Lemurian Epoch began work on his soul hundreds of thousands of years earlier than the masses who received this link in the later Atlantean Epoch. This extra period of development means that those pioneers have "more soul" or are "soulful." We also speak of the "old soul" as contrasted with the "young soul." The soul is truly the flower of civilization, the essence of all that distinguishes humanity from the lower kingdoms on earth.

"Man is a threefold Spirit," says Max Heindel, "possessing a mind by means of which he governs a threefold body which he emanated from himself to gather experience. This threefold body he transmutes into a threefold soul upon which he nourishes himself from impotence to omnipotence."

Technically, it is said that the soul is the *essence* extracted by the threefold Spirit from its experiences in and through a threefold body. The three "veils of spirit" are, properly speaking, the three primary "rays," *qualities*, or *powers* of the Virgin Spirit. When the Virgin Spirit (the Primal Man of the Gnostics) puts into expression these three "rays" or powers, it is then the Ego. It is the Virgin Spirit, not the Ego, that is made in the image and likeness of God. In the *Rosicrucian Cosmo-Conception* Max Hein-  
del writes of this Virgin Spirit: "Man is inherently a virgin spirit, good, noble, and true in every respect. All that is not good is from the lower nature, that *illusory* reflection of the Ego. The Virgin Spirit is always giving wise counsel. If we could only follow the impulses of the heart—the first thought—Universal Brotherhood would be realized here and now."

The three aspects of the Virgin Spirit are "reflected" in the three aspects of "body," *the illusory reflection of the Ego*. These are the *desire body*, the *vital body*, and the *physical body*. By means of the *link of mind* the Ego works upon the threefold body and extracts the essence of experience in the form of *soul* which nourishes its spiritual consciousness. Statements such as these must not be taken in a materialistic way. As has been said, the human mind is yet in its mineral stage. Unless the processes of natural growth are consistently promoted, mind will tend to mineralize, crystallize, and materialize every spiritual concept which passes through it. Every occult student must guard against this danger at all times.

The three aspects of the Spirit nourished by the pabulum of the soul—essence of the Ego's experience in evolution—are defined in Rosicrucian terminology as the *Human Spirit*, the *Life Spirit* and the *Divine Spirit*. The Divine Spirit is the first expression of the pristine Virgin Spirit. It is the first ray, the first aspect, and corresponds to the Creative Will of God. Any activity of *creative will* in evolution upon the Earth must, therefore feed this aspect of spirit; that is, stimulate its activity.

By work in the etheric body the Ego extracts the essence of the *intellectual soul*. This nourishes the *Life Spirit*, which is the universal or Christ Consciousness. (*Spirit* may almost be translated as a *state of consciousness*.) It is by repetition of spiritual truths that the consciousness of the Invisible Helper is awakened in the intellectual soul. The two higher ethers of the vital body, the light and reflecting ethers, are the basis of the intellectual soul, and the extraction of its essence is fundamental to all initiatory work.

By work in the desire body, spiritualizing the emotions and desires, the Ego extracts the *emotional soul*, the pabulum nourishing the *Human Spirit*. The *Divine* and *Life Spirits* are universal states of consciousness in which the Virgin Spirit is active. The Human Spirit is that state of consciousness in which man lives, moves, and has his being. It is characterized by a sense of individuality—egotism. The Ego is the true individuality; the desire body and its illusory reflection, a false ego. This false ego must be wholly transmuted before man's evolutionary work is completed.

The threefold soul essence is also manifest in the Desire World as *soul life*, *soul light*, and *soul power*, corresponding to the three aspects (or states) of the Spirit.

As the soul comes more and more into evidence the exterior world is increasingly translated in the light of spiritual values. The dense body becomes more tenuous and yet, marvelous to say, less destructible than now, and capable of exerting tremendous power—such as might destroy our whole physical world if improperly used. When directed by spiritually enlightened Initiates, men or women, this power heals all weaknesses and imperfections of the human body, enabling it to *reflect* the Divine Spirit.

At His coming Christ Jesus implanted in our Earth a new universal soul force from the World of Life Spirit. Its microcosmic expression is the intellectual soul extracted from the vital body by spiritual thought. When we have that mind which was in Christ Jesus *we think with the*

*soul as well as with the intellect.* When mental problems can be flooded with soul light their solution will be instantaneous and their issues permanently satisfactory.

The spiritualization of the vital body will be manifested to the mortal senses as an interior radiant fire. In Persian mythology we read of the Peris, a race of creatures above man in spiritual status, but lower than the angels. Of them it is said that fire, not blood, runs in their veins, and that they feed upon pleasant odors and sweet perfumes; yet they are so far material as to be able to enter into intimate personal relationship with human beings. This suggests what our own future conditions will be.

Until the work on the dense and vital bodies has been accomplished we cannot know the true meaning of our humanity. When this is done the false reflection in our desire nature will be replaced by a true one. Today all desire is separative. Selfishness abounds, for our desires turn inward upon self. When the Ego extracts the emotional soul from the Desire Body we shall be conscious of but one desire: *to do the will of God!* Christ Jesus said, "My meat is to do the will of him that sent me."

It may be well to point out here that occult writers use a varied terminology so it is impossible to give exactly equivalent terms in all instances. The student will find it necessary to study these lessons until he has grasped *the ideas of terms as we use them*; then he will have no difficulty in recognizing those ideas under other guises in other occult works.

#### MIND AND THE SOUL BODY

There is a definite path of evolution for the mind and another for the soul; nevertheless, the two lines develop simultaneously and harmoniously. The more completely the mind becomes a channel for the expression of spirit, the more soulful the individual becomes. Though a person study every book dealing with spiritual subjects, *knowledge as such will but stimulate him mentally. Knowledge*

*alone never resulted in soul growth.* While a developed mentality is necessary to soul growth it is not of itself sufficient.

We have discussed at length the nature of the three-fold soul as the product of the Ego working in a three-fold body. We have seen how the soul is spiritual essence extracted from experience on the physical plane. But there is also a vehicle called "the soul body," which is composed of the two higher ethers of the vital body and has a very intimate relationship with the intellectual soul.

When we add to the daily repetition of spiritual thought a life of loving service to others, we attract into our vital body a glorious flaming golden ether of the nature of the Christ force. This is the spiritualized *light ether*. Though we already possess a nucleus of it, through the love that flows out in service we can attract such an abundance from the aura of the Cosmic Christ that it is as if we breathed a golden atmosphere pouring down from cosmic space. Within this fiery ether a celestial blue aura appears which does not usually show outside the physical body except in great saints and Initiates. With these it may be seen in the form of a blue sun shining around and through the human figure at its center. This is the spiritualized *reflecting ether*, the ether reflecting the Good, the True, the Beautiful, *and nothing else*.

These are the colors which artist-seers so frequently use when painting the Holy Family. Mary's robe is usually blue, her halo golden. It is a psychic law that that which is within the soul presses constantly outward into the world; and, by the process of transmutation that which is in the world presses inward upon the soul. The inner and outer worlds are, therefore, constantly changing place. These inner soul colors will sooner or later find expression in the personal adornment and clothing of an individual by the process of transmutation. For this reason the garments of Holy Ones typify their soul states.

In Greek mythology the weaving of the soul body—the golden "wedding garment" which the neophyte wears at

the mystic marriage where the Christ presides—is symbolized in the story of the web woven by Penelope. Though she wove it every day it was never completed until Ulysses returned to her. (Unfortunately, we cannot follow every detail of such an allegory because it has been materialized by unspiritual minds.) We who seek the Christ, like Penelope awaiting Ulysses, are weaving day by day a beautiful web of color which, in the night hours of sleep, is incorporated into the tabernacle of spirit. Each day, again like Penelope, we begin afresh; and our web is not completed until the Bridegroom comes. (*Husband* has the same connotation. In our Bible God speaks through Isaiah saying, “For thy Maker is thine husband.”)

As Penelope unravelled her web at night so is it possible for us to “unravel” our own golden “wedding garment;” for the soul, unlike spirit, is perishable, being the product of evolution. By right living soul powers are acquired; by evil and perverse living soul powers can be destroyed—but *never spirit*. It is from among the “soul-less,” those who have destroyed their souls, that Black Brotherhoods recruit their workers. These Egos possess a mind and a threefold body, but the *soul quality* is absent. As a result they are entirely *inhuman* in their unscrupulous and cruel pursuits. It is fortunate, however, that as it requires many lives of fruitful endeavor to build a soulful character, it also requires many lives wholly to destroy the soul and produce a soul-less personality. Ezekiel’s statement “the soul that sinneth it shall die” refers to this soul—which is not to be confused with the Ego or Virgin Spirit, for neither of them can die. The animal soul alone is active in a soul-less personality. Such a personality is incapable of feeling any human impulse; even its higher animal emotions rapidly degenerate.

As we have indicated, the mind plays a most important part in the evolution of the soul since it is the link between Spirit and body. This link enables the Spirit to work in the threefold body and extract essence for the threefold soul. The soul work, therefore, can only be ac-



complished through the mind. It is for this reason that many occult textbooks refer to the mind as "the Path." And it also accounts for Paul's statement that "to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life everlasting."

#### THE WILL—HUMAN AND SPIRITUAL

It is not generally recognized that the faculty we call *will* is spiritual, not emotional or mental. Will, the active function of the Divine Spirit in man, is the highest attribute of the Virgin Spirit made in God's likeness. It is, in fact, a *creative principle*, differing in both nature and function from what we ordinarily call "will power." This latter is all too often directed by *the desire to get or the desire to rule*, though not necessarily so. Desire and will are not identical. Because of the popular use of the word *will* as being a form of personal desire, occultists frequently speak of the "spiritualization of the will." This means that the desire body is transmuted; the false ego is slain and the true Ego is enthroned in the *emotional soul*. This being accomplished, *there is no false will remaining*—only the will of the Virgin Spirit. This is made possible through the Christing of the mind: "Let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus."

#### STEPS OF PREPARATION

To become proficient in any profession requires study, practice, and many years of sacrificial service. This is true when one seeks to awaken his higher mental faculties. That the mind may become a channel for spirit and nothing but spirit necessitates prolonged and careful training. In this connection the Rosicrucian School enumerates seven steps of special importance.

*Concentration* is fundamental and therefore first. Concentration is a strictly mental exercise which aims to make the mind one-pointed. The ability to shut out all outer

distractions at will, and to hold the mind firmly fixed upon the subject under consideration, is difficult; the practice required causes many students to abandon further effort toward mental discipline.

And so we list *persistence* of effort as the next requisite. This is a quality sadly lacking in the majority of aspirants, despite the fact that without it nothing of real value in any line of endeavor can be accomplished. Mastery of any subject can be achieved only by continued patience and effort.

The third quality necessary for development is *Discrimination*. Absence of this mental attitude has led to more disillusionment and failure on the Path than any other. Its cultivation is of paramount importance, and yet the majority of occult students pay but little heed to its attainment. Perhaps the most fitting definition of *discrimination* is to be found in the ancient occult admonition: *Learn to know the false from the true, the real from the unreal.*

These three primary steps toward self-development are entirely on the mental plane; they are tools by which the workman changes the rough ashlar (of his mind) into the Master's perfect cube.

The four higher steps belong to the realm of spirit and are developed after the mind has been thoroughly disciplined. The first of these is *Devotion*, centered in the heart. *Mind* and *Spirit* can be united only *by way of the heart*, when the necessary devotion has been awakened.

*Meditation* is the chief means for further renewing of the mind. This is a spiritual process and replaces the mental activity of concentration. In it no mental effort is required, as the mind has now been trained to obey the slightest impulse of spirit. Through concentration one comes into contact with the *form* aspect of matter; meditation transcends form to arrive at the *soul* of things.

*Contemplation* is a step beyond meditation. Here mind and heart are *en rapport*. Nothing relative to a subject is concealed. Past, present, and future are as an open book.

*Adoration* is the final step by which the student is at-one-ment with the subject under consideration.

These four higher steps are attainable only after the student has learned to rise in consciousness to specific degrees of development. In adoration the entire octave is covered. The Christed Consciousness, the ultimate goal of human evolution, is attained.

#### THOUGHT POWER AND THE CELESTIAL HIERARCHIES

The twelve zodiacal Hierarchies project into the universe archetypal ideas that are charged with cosmic creative energies. How clearly these register in human consciousness, and the extent to which they are appropriated and translated into action, depend upon man's evolutionary status.

Under Aries, Taurus, and Gemini the cosmic germ (seed) of thought force was projected and disseminated. Under Cancer, Leo, and Virgo, the mind, then in its early development, was plastic and amenable to external guidance. During this period man-in-the-making was a veritable automaton under the supervision of his celestial Guardians. The power of logical thinking had not been developed. This faculty came to mankind under the next sign, Libra. Where man had previously responded to the impulses of Cosmic Wisdom, under Libra he began his "fall" into human concepts.

In the pre-Christian era thought forces and their influence upon humanity were controlled by Scorpio. After the coming of Christ these forces were taken over by the Hierarchy of Sagittarius, the Lords of Mind, who still control and operate them. Egotism and nationalism became dominant factors under these two signs. Under Capricorn, Aquarius, and Pisces thought power will transcend its limitations and bring into manifestation the superman *made in the image and likeness of God*.

Marie Carmichael Stopes, Doctor of Philosophy and Science, in writing of *The Intellect in Command*, states:

“There is a curious mental quality in the brain of many human beings, termed by some scientists as a form of ‘herd instinct,’ which tends to place opposition in the way of any new or novel invention or discovery. Hence it is very often that the prophet who brings new and enriching knowledge is persecuted. An example of this is the life of the noted physician Sir James Simpson, one of the first advocates of the use of chloroform to alleviate pain in operations and child birth. He was violently opposed by the clergy and many doctors and public men of his day, who contended that God intended humanity to endure this pain, therefore it was impious and wicked to try in any way to alleviate it.

“His answer which was beautiful and dignified has been vindicated by time. He said: I am sure you deeply regret and grieve with me that the interests of genuine religion should ever and anon be endangered and damaged by weak but well-meaning men believing and urging that this or that new improvement or knowledge is against the words of the Scriptures. We may always rest fully and perfectly assured that whatever is true in point of fact, or humane and merciful in point of practice, will find no condemnation in the Word of God.”

Pioneers in every line of advanced thought must struggle to win recognition for phases of New Age illumination such as the spiritual concept of astral science, which will soon be the commonly accepted credo of the masses.

#### THE MIND AND THE HEART

As each person progresses through the successive grades of Life's school of evolution, he will learn his lessons via one of two cosmic streams of consciousness. That is, he will learn primarily either by way of the head or by way of the heart. When he aspires to the higher Path he learns he must balance the two. This is an arduous task, requiring many lives for its completion. Much may be accomplished, however, in a single incarnation if the stu-

dent is willing to devote himself to the fulfillment of this most exalted ideal.

Mind is a comparatively recent acquisition of the Ego, as has been said; and youth is ever proud, with a tendency toward arrogance and conceit. These are characteristics that distinguish a "young," inexperienced soul from an "old" soul ripe in wisdom.

*Reason* is the principal faculty to be evolved during the present Fifth Race Cycle. It is very evident that in this era man's mind is in the ascendance, with heart relegated to a secondary place as a motivating center of living and aspiration.

When the aspirant begins to *live the life* in earnest, the spinal essence gradually awakens and ascends toward the head. If the individual is temperamentally a mental type, this force will be predominantly positive in the brain and negative in the heart. If, on the other hand, he is a mystical or emotional type, the reverse will be true: positive polarity in the heart, negative in the head.

The positive center represents the dynamic force of either mind or heart and works to the detriment of the opposite function. Thus, when a person who is centered mentally begins occult study he is apt to cultivate intellectual power at the expense of his devotional nature, unless a special effort is made to counterbalance this tendency.

The mind is separative, divisional, and disruptive in its workings. Many who have followed the mental path to the exclusion of the heart become coldly analytical, unable to discover the soul wisdom which animated them for a moment at the beginning of their quest. They become disillusioned and may turn back to materialistic pursuits.

Those who follow the heart path exclusively all too often lack persistence, steadfastness, and discrimination to pilot themselves along higher reaches of the path. So they too may turn back to the ways of the world in discouragement, sometimes in despair.

The safe way is to work toward effecting a true balance between the two. The mentalist must learn to still his mind

and listen to the dictates of his heart. The mystic must learn to control his emotions and heed the voice of clear reason.

As this procedure is followed, spiritual currents ascending in the body will effect a balance of power between heart and head, and further development of the weaker of the two will become easier of accomplishment.

This path between head and heart is symbolized by the mystic journey from Jerusalem (heart) to Bethlehem (head) made by Joseph (masculine) and Mary (feminine) in order that the Christ-Child might be born.

### SPIRIT TRIUMPHANT

God is the first and eternal flame. Virgin Spirit (our humanity) is a spark of that Flame. The purpose of repeated cycles of reincarnation is to fan this spark until it becomes like unto its parent Flame. After being so long enmeshed in the illusion of matter, the Spirit's memory of its celestial origin has become dim. Through suffering and sorrow it rends the veil of illusion and discovers its inherent divinity; then commences the long and arduous journey back to its heavenly home.

Once the Spirit is fully awakened no obstacle can long impede its progress. The Parable of the Prodigal Son becomes an actual spiritual experience. Weary of having so long partaken of husks with the swine (living entirely in the outer or objective life), the "spark" returns home, where reunion with the Father occasions great rejoicing, as recounted in the parable—a parable that is applicable not only to a single individual but to the human race as a whole.

## Chapter XII

### ***New Birth Through Regeneration***

*Wherever the name of man is spoken the doctrine of immortality is announced.*

*There are two heavens in men; the one is Luna Cebrum, but in the heart of man is the true micro-cosmic heaven. Yea, the heart of man is the true heaven of an immortal being, out of which the soul has never yet come, which new Olympus and Heaven, Christ Jesus has chosen for His dwelling place in man.—Paracelsus.*

#### THE SEVEN JEWELS AND THE SEVEN STAGES OF INITIATION

“These portals,” says the *Book of the Golden Precepts*, “lead the aspirant across the waters on the other shore. Each Portal hath a golden key that openeth its gate; these keys are:

1. The key of Charity and Love immortal.
2. The key of Harmony in word and act, the key that counterbalances cause and effect and leaves no further room for Karmic action.
3. Patience sweet, that naught can ruffle.
4. Indifference to pleasure and pain, illusion conquered, Truth alone perceived.
5. Dauntless energy that fights its way to supernal Truth out of the mire of lies terrestrial.
6. The Golden Gate which once opened leads toward the realms of the Eternal and its ceaseless contemplation.
7. The key which makes of man a god, creating of him a Bodhisattva.”

Since the founding of initiatory Schools in ancient Lemuria after the link of mind was bestowed upon the *pioneers* of the human race. (the masses did not receive the

mental link until the Atlantean Epoch), there have been two great classes or divisions in the Schools, corresponding, after a fashion, let us say, to preparatory school and college; or to college and post-graduate degrees.

What we call these Schools matters little; but following the Greek custom, esotericists generally designate the lower school the Lesser Mysteries and the higher, the Greater Mysteries. There are nine Degrees or grades in the Lesser Mysteries, called Initiations—or, if the metaphysical terms are preferred, *expansions of consciousness*—and four in the Greater Mysteries. There are seven schools which teach or confer the nine Lesser Mysteries, and five which teach or confer the four Greater Mysteries. These schools are not physical but etheric structures such as the New Jerusalem described by St. John; and they are not to be confused with mere secret societies. Truly, they all have an outlet on the material plane; if they had not, they would not reach our material-minded humanity and so would have no pupils to instruct in their Mysteries! These Mystery Schools, with their exoteric representatives, change from age to age in order to meet the requirements of the people among whom their work is to be done.

All of these Mystery Orders are “formed on cosmic lines”; thus the thirteen Initiations correspond to the twelve constellations and their spiritual head of the zodiac; also their planetary rulers, some of which remain to be discovered. It is interesting to speculate that in the Greek Zodiac the Pleiades were considered to be a thirteenth constellation until a late date. The great Christian type of the Mystery School is that of the Christ with His twelve Apostles. The Rosicrucian Order is also composed of twelve Brothers and an esoteric thirteenth, the revered Founder, symbolically designated Christian Rose Cross after the work he came to do for the world.

The seven Schools of the Lesser Mysteries and the five Schools of the Greater Mysteries are grouped under a central Intelligence, called (again in the Greek fashion) the Liberator—a title anciently conferred upon Dionysus, but



in Christian times related to the Risen Christ (or to the thirteenth Hierophant in a Mystery School.). The mystic thirteenth is always the head of an Order; and the twelve heads are in turn grouped about that thirteenth whom Christians call the Christ, although He is known by other names in other lands and among other peoples.

In addition to the sacred numbers *twelve* and *thirteen*, we observe the recurrence of *seven* and *five*, corresponding to the five planets, Sun, and Moon of the Ptolemaic system. In some Schools the Initiations are arranged differently, so that the illuminative process is covered in seven Degrees instead of nine; but the work done is the same in substance. The generally accepted Temple aspirant is a novice of one of the Lesser Mystery Schools, and of very early Degrees of that School. Few have advanced in spiritual work beyond the first seven of the Temple Rites. The remaining two Degrees (in the ninefold system) rise above the realms of this mortal plane, giving companionship with celestial hosts past discerning or describing by mere mortality.

From all of which is readily understood why the number seven is sacred to occultists. It has been said that "whoever passes over these seven steps and degrees comes to such a marvelous place where he sees much mystery and attains the transmutation of all natural things." The seven Schools of the Lesser Mysteries, also the seven Degrees of the sevenfold system, relate biblically to the mystic ladder which Jacob saw in his vision. The whole of the initiatory scheme is symbolized in the winding stairway of Solomon's Temple which led to the *inner chamber* where a successful candidate was given the "wages of a master."

The five Schools which teach the four Greater Mysteries are almost wholly unknown, even to the esoteric world. Rarely does any soul pass their sacred portals. The Hierophants through whom this sublime work is administered are the fewest and highest of Earth's Initiates, and their pupils are also few.

As a human being possesses an aura which surrounds and interpenetrates his physical body, so also is the Earth

planet clothed about with subtle matter. The physical sphere is familiar ground to everyone, but not so the spheres that lie above it. These include the etheric, the astral, the mental, the spiritual, and the higher spiritual. In the nine Lesser Mysteries of the Rose Cross (or seven Mysteries of certain other Schools), the candidate ascends successfully through these envelopes of the Earth planet by *expansion of consciousness*. He also recapitulates, in full consciousness, the entire evolution of the Earth and its humanity, both spiritually and physically. This recapitulation has the effect of awakening in him all the dormant faculties and powers which the race possessed in past Epochs, so making available to him the sum total of the race experience. What this means is seen in the marvelous instincts of animals and plants, instincts which man has lost since he acquired reason but which in an Initiate become a consciously usable addition to intellect. Besides his humanity he possesses a superinstinct, an inexhaustible vitality by which his body renews itself just as certain plants grow new parts to replace old ones. Thus his body becomes as indestructible as a diamond or ruby, for he has full control of the chemical forces also. All of this goes into the making of an Adept, an Initiate who has completed all of the nine Lesser Mysteries and the first of the Greater, thereby entering "the heart of the Earth" and meeting the Liberator face to face.

However, an Adept is so rare upon Earth that a layman is not at all likely to meet one on the physical plane. The layman's interest is therefore centered almost wholly in the lower five of the nine lesser Mysteries. Few laymen take more than one Initiation in any one lifetime. When any candidate passes several Initiations in one incarnation, we may be sure these are chiefly recapitulations of work done in many previous lifetimes.

The fact has been noted in this series that in embryological recapitulation, the fourth month brings a decisive change in foetal development; esoterically, we say that at this time certain inner-world contacts are dissolved. The

Ego concentrates definitely earthward and is intent upon building the physical vehicle in which it is to be embodied.

In Initiation, the Fourth Degree is an equally definite step heavenward; certain physical contacts are severed, and the inner-world relationship becomes more intimate. Henceforward for the disciple GOD IS ALL AND ALL IS GOD. Though he remains in the exterior world where flesh and blood abide, he is no longer of it.

The fourth plane of Earth's aura is the mental plane; it is the "intelligence" of the planet or, in metaphysical terms, it is the intelligence of God expressing itself relative to the Earth.

The mental world is the link between spirit and matter. Immediately below the mental plane is the world of desire; above it is the higher mental, or abstract mind, the plane of universal ideas. In this is the world (consciousness) of the germinal idea, without which manifestation could not take place because it is the seedground of cosmos. Hence it marks a crucial point not only in involution down into matter for the race, but in evolution up into spirit for the Initiate. We may note in passing that *involution into form* has been a mass process throughout; Initiation, however, is an *individual* process. The Initiate stands alone.

At the fourth Initiation the Ego makes its decision as to whether it will proceed on the White or the Black Path. The strong, fully conscious Ego will not make the wrong decision.

The Fifth Degree, if attained, leads to sainthood. In this majestic Rite the Ego, having chosen unalterably to unite with spirit, is brought face to face with its own true self. In the ecstasy of this high moment the disciple comes to comprehend the true meaning of those words inscribed above the entrance of Grecian Temples: "Man know Thyself."

In the Sixth and Seventh Degrees, the personality is perfected as a channel through which the divine self may pour its powers in creative work; every word and deed is inspired by a wisdom which is ageless. The Initiate bears

the aroma of timelessness, for he knows himself to be a part of that which is without beginning and without ending. Thus the personal self is absorbed by the higher, spiritual self and the disciple stands at the threshold of godhood. In the two final Degrees he enters upon the work which makes him a god indeed. The Rosierucian says that the victorious candidate of the Seventh Rite has blended the Red and White Roses which bloom in his Rose Garden. The *Rosarium* of medieval alchemists was simply the laboratory (state of consciousness) of the aspirant who was seeking divine consummation.

Upon his head he wears a crown of sparkling jewels set in living gold. The kingly crown of an earthly ruler has its origin in the spiritual crown of ancient Initiate Priest-Kings after the order of Melchizedek. The Pope's triple tiara is another symbolic representation of this spiritually visible crown of the Initiate who has risen through the three planes which lie under the higher mental.

Such also are the king and queen described in the alchemical marriage of C. R. C.

#### THE MYSTIC WEDDING RITES OF C. R. C.

The Grand Master of Rosierucianism, Christian Rose Cross, designated simply as C. R. C., gave for the edification of all true disciples the formula by which the Magnum Opus, or Great Work, may be accomplished. This he did under the veil of allegory which he terms *The Marriage of the King and Queen*. (Astrologically, the king is the sign Leo and the queen is Cancer, or Sun and Moon respectively.)

We shall have no difficulty tracing in this mysterious document the main outline of the work of Initiation as we have briefly discussed it heretofore. The mystic wedding garment of the soul is described in the words, "the fair and glorious Lady whose garments were all of sky color and curiously bespangled with golden stars." This refers

to the heavens as the symbol of the Queen, even as sacred art represents Mary in azure robes sprinkled with golden stars in her role of Queen of Heaven. So also was the Goddess Isis represented, and the earlier sky-goddess whose worship was incorporated with hers. He adds that this Lady "mounted upward with the swiftness of an eagle," and the entire hill throbbed for a quarter of an hour afterward with the music of her passing. It was thus she appeared to tender him the invitation to the mystic nuptials.

These symbolic events, C. R. C. tells us, covered a period of seven days—which obviously correspond to seven Degrees. Of these seven, the First, Second, Third, and Fourth are the novitiate Degrees of Preparation. The Fifth and Sixth are Degrees of Illumination. The Seventh is the culmination of the Great Work, the Degree of Attainment.

In the Degrees of Preparation the disciple learns to "live the life." C.R.C., after receiving the summons to the mystic wedding, "examines himself" relative to the problems covered by these lower grades: "my bodily behavior and outward conversation. My brotherly love toward my neighbor. The affection that was bent only to pomp and worldly pride and not to the good of mankind, moreover the flesh sometimes manifested itself. Am I duly purged and cleansed? Am I always contriving how by this art I may in a short time abundantly increase my profit and advantage, rear up stately palaces, make myself an everlasting name in the world, and other carnal designs?"

Observe that practically every temptation which appears on the Way of Attainment is enumerated here.

The physical plane is represented as a deep and dark dungeon "wherein without one glimpse of light . . . all render the afflictions of each other the more grievous." Those being prepared for Initiation "received a little light"; after this light had been projected for a time, an ancient man and matron (who typify Wisdom) commanded that a "cord be let down for seven times into the dungeon and draw up whomsoever could hang upon it."

Significant is the statement, "Divers because their chains were too heavy and their hands too tender could not keep their hold upon the cord, and many were pulled off by another who could not get himself at it. But they of all who most moved my compassion were those whose weight was so heavy that they tore their very hands from their bodies and yet could not get up." St. Paul instructed his followers to lay aside every weight and to gird themselves as men set to run a race. C. R. C. recounts how, as the cord descended for *the sixth* time, he was privileged to ascend "uppermost above all the rest."

After passing through the preliminary qualifications of the sixth Rite, each candidate was "given a piece of gold for remembrance" (additional luster of the soul body). Christ Jesus took gold from the fish's mouth for His Disciples, and for a like reason.

Each was then "sent about his own business" (the business of the Father); but "With this annexed intimation, that we to the glory of God should benefit our neighbors and reserve in silence what we have been entrusted with."

C. R. C. was still troubled about his infirmities, the "sacred wounds" upon his hands and feet. These "wounds" mark the separation of the soul body from the dense physical body. The fifth of the sacred wounds, the one in the side, is formed by the thrust of the Sacred Spear at the time of Initiation, while the Crown of Thorns creates another. St. Paul also declared, "I bear in my body the marks of Christ Jesus."

At this stage of Illumination C. R. C. received from the Spirit of Wisdom these words: "My son, let not this defect afflict thee! Even in this world and in the state of thy imperfections to come into so high a light! . . . Keep these wounds for my sake." It is in the Sixth Degree that the personality is kept in almost continuous contact with the god within, the higher nature.

Further preparations are now detailed by C.R.C. "I girded my loins with blood-red ribbon and in my hat I

placed four red roses." Here the reference is to the purification and transmutation of the blood and the principal desire center of the body, the liver. The four principal spiritual centers are now active also, and the spiritual Fire Force has ascended the serpentine path to the heart, throat, and head, giving him power over the spirits of Fire, Earth, Air, and Water. These are the four basic occult elements of the phenomenal world; learning to "work" them constitutes the initiatory disciplines of the nine Lesser Mysteries. Each Ego is centered primarily in one or another, but must learn the secrets in them all. The four converge in the Seventh Degree. The four Greater Mysteries deal wholly with the spiritual or superphysical aspects of these four elements.

Seeking the right path, C.R.C. is led to it by a white dove, which he pursues. The dove is a symbol of purity and peace: "Only the pure in heart shall see God." Later, it is often the "Virgin" within himself who guides him to the light. He declares, "I never would have found the way but that She afforded me some light."

Every candidate ultimately arrives at the same destination as C.R.C., the "royal beautiful Portal situated upon a high hill." Identical porters (tylers in Masonry) guard the three entrances (physical, desire, and mental) with their demand for "a token" (visible results of a life lived worthily).

It is the beautiful Virgin who greets the wedding guests and supervises weighing of each one upon golden scales, preparatory to serving the marriage supper. (Astrologically, she is Virgo, or Astrea, Goddess of Justice among the Greeks, who holds the scale of the gods, Libra, in her hands).

C.R.C. "outweighed all the weights." When three men (the threefold lower nature) hung upon the opposite beam, they could not prevail against him. It was then that the Virgin graciously requested the gift of his roses—meaning that the four higher spiritual centers had become the means of perfect rapport between his higher and lower

natures; i.e., complete transmutation of his lower self. The delights of spirit outweigh all the allurements of the senses.

On parting from C.R.C., the Virgin spoke these words: "Thou hast received more than the others, therefore [give] a larger return." In other words, "unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required."

The chosen wedding guests were presented by the Virgin to the royal bridal couple as those who had come at "peril of body and life." C.R.C. bears witness that the raiment of the bridal pair was invested with such a wonderful shining that he could hardly bear to look upon them.

Certain sacred ceremonies were then performed in the House of the Sun, after which the guests drank together the Draught of Silence as black coffins were brought in to the accompaniment of the following chant: "This is the death by which many shall be made alive." Initiation always includes the Rite of Death, wherein the personal and the finite are laid away as the glories of the illimitable and the infinite are assured. Each Degree reenacts (recapitulates) these symbolic verities on ever-ascending levels of life, light, and love.

The alchemical processes of the Marriage Rites are omitted here because they are given at length in the section on *Alchemical Processes*.

At the final Degree on the seventh day, the new Knights of the Golden Stone were pledged to observe the following laws: "To abominate all uncleanness. That they should be ready to assist all worthy persons who had need of them. That the honor conferred upon them should not be applied to works of worldly pride and ambition. That they should ascribe their exalted Order only to God and to His handmaid, Nature."

They were then installed in the culminating Seventh Degree as Knights who "possessed power over ignorance, poverty, and sickness and were able to handle them at their pleasure."



THE LIFE OF CHRIST JESUS PHYSIOLOGICALLY INTERPRETED

*There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God; for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him. Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily I say unto thee, Except a man be born again he cannot see the kingdom of God.*

—John 3:1-3

The third chapter of John's Gospel contains one of the most profound teachings given to the world in connection with new birth through regeneration. Paracelsus phrases it epigrammatically thus: "We dissolve the living body with Apollo's Fire, so that what was before a stone may become spirit. From the innermost parts of this we extract Gold."

Physiologically interpreted, the life of the Christ details the lifting of the "liquid gold" by means of the awakened Spirit Fire from its slumbering place in the sacral plexus. Gold is soluble in mercury, and it is the mercurial principle which is most important in this alchemical work, the Fire in the sacral center supplying the heat by which the gold is retrieved from the mercury. In certain mining operations where gold is found in minute quantities, mercury is used to "pick up" the gold in the dross. The gold-bearing mercury is then heated, which causes the mercury to evaporate and leave the gold free. Familiar to all are the expansive properties of mercury in thermometers, where heat causes the metal to rise in a tube marked off to indicate temperatures. A phase of the alchemical allegory thus becomes clear, that mercury "picks up" the gold in the dross; then as the "mercury" rises from the action of the spinal Spirit Fire, the pure "gold" is deposited (precipitated) in the various centers or receptacles, particularly in those of the head. The sacred

Fire that burns beneath the crucible is the Christ Love Power in man, which asserts that, "And I, if I be lifted up . . . will draw all men unto me." Or according to Paul, he that ascends is the same as he that descends.

The pure and holy teaching of regeneration is centered in this alchemical process. Heaven and Earth meet in the alchemist's laboratory. Said Hermes: "Separate the subtile from the gross. Draw the internal fire from the lowest depth of Saturn (sacral plexus) and lift it to the house of Aries [head]. Let Mercury [reason] be the interval and your signal the Doves of Diana [Venus or Love]."

While the pure gold is being extracted, with the aid of mercury (intelligence, meditation) from gross matter, the sacred Fire must be continually fed until it, too, rises upward to the head, where it vivifies the spiritual centers latent there. Man himself is thus the work and the laboratory. "All the earth contains not so great a mystery and excellence as man reformed by God into His image and likeness."

Thomas Vaughn, the famous Rosicrucian alchemist, writes: "The great secret Fire is the center of all things visible and invisible. It lives in water, air, and earth, and in minerals, herbs, and beasts, in men, stars, and angels—and originally in God Himself." This Fire is in fact that which Moses saw in the Burning Bush, and which still burns in all the kingdoms of Nature.

Every open-minded student of alchemy comes to the conclusion that Christ Jesus is the true Philosopher's Stone; and if the alchemist seeks to "make" that Stone, it means only that he is creating within himself "this mind . . . which was also in Christ Jesus," as Paul instructed; for only as we repeat in our lives the way which Christ demonstrated for us can we come to Illumination and, ultimately, to Liberation. Through that mind (Mercury) which was in Christ Jesus, the transmutation of matter into spirit is brought about, and this is the meaning of new birth through regeneration as Rosicrucians comprehend it.

Each organ in the body corresponds to some soul power or mental faculty, and the awakening and lifting of the Christ Fire (the Brazen Serpent) impinges upon the nerve centers ruling these organs and effects their transmutation; and through them that of the entire body organism. The steps in the life of Christ Jesus may be correlated to these alchemical stages.

#### THE NATIVITY

The birth of the Master Jesus took place in a manger located in a stable under an inn where, the Bible expressly states, there was no room for his parents. The manger where beasts feed has reference to the desire body, the forces of which have for so long gone to feed the selfish desires of humankind, lusts of one kind or another. This lowly place must first be cleansed and illumined by the Christ Fire. It has most aptly been termed "the Alchemist's kitchen."

#### THE DEDICATION

The Rite of Dedication follows shortly after the birth. Alchemically, the Christ Fire, newly sprung to life in the "kitchen," ascends to the second great nerve plexus and radiates its golden stream of light through the nerves. The spleen is also vivified. This experience is accompanied by ability to retain consciousness unbroken from the night to the day, from sleep to waking. As a consequence of its conscious astral journeying, the aspirant's threefold body is dedicated upon the shrine of spirit.

The spinal cord, which has been called by modern mystics the laboratory of the alchemist, plays a most vital part in the process of regeneration. It connects the generative organs in the lower part of the body with the head, locale of the regenerative organs. The spinal cord extends from the coccyx to the upper border of the atlas just below the cerebellum, passing through the medulla and open-

ing into the fourth ventricle of the brain. The portion of the cord below the second lumbar vertebrae tapers to a point, the *fibrum terminale*. Recent microscopic investigations have shown that this *fibrum terminale*, formerly thought to be merely a fibrous cord, is filled with highly sensitive grey nerve matter.

The minute canal that runs through the center of the cord is the channel for the ascent of the spinal spirit Fire, or Kundalini, termed symbolically the Great Mother in man. This is the Great Mother who commanded that the cord be lowered seven times so that all who were imprisoned in the dark abyss might have an opportunity to ascend into the upper light, as recounted in the mystic marriage of C.R.C. It has been said that so long as Kundalini sleeps, man's interest is focussed in the outer objective world, but as soon as She is awakened his consciousness reaches out toward the ecstasy of the subjective Realities. The Fire, when in ascent, glows along the spinal cord like a chain of shimmering light. (Here is the origin of the rosary for those who can understand it).

With the Nativity comes the beginning of the awakening of Kundalini, and the first faint glow of the light within the sacral center; at the Dedication, the light has already begun to rise in the spinal canal.

#### THE FLIGHT INTO EGYPT

The flight of Mary and Joseph with the Child Jesus into Egypt was necessitated by Herod's persecution of the innocents. The persecution and flight symbolize the recrudescence of dormant failings. To quote H. P. Blavatsky: "As soon as one pledges himself a probationer, certain occult effects ensue. The first is throwing outward of everything latent in the nature, faults, habits, qualities or subdued desires, whether good, bad or indifferent. If a man is vain or sensual or ambitious, whether by avatism or by karmic heirloom, all those vices are sure to break out, even if he has hitherto successfully concealed and repressed

them. They will come to the front irrepressibly and he will have to fight a hundred times harder than before until he kills all such tendencies in himself."

All negative tendencies of the desire body act as deterrents upon the ascending spinal Spirit Fire, and so hold the aspirant for a longer time within the material darkness of Egypt.

#### TEACHING IN THE TEMPLE

Later, as the creative force is still further augmented by spiritual living, the Christ Child within "waxes in stature and in wisdom." When the creative Fire touches upon the powerful Sun center of the sympathetic nervous system, the solar plexus, the doors of the psychic realms begin to open. The neophyte speaks a new language of joy and delight as visions of inner worlds are revealed to him. The illumined Christ Child begins to teach in the brain Temple, bewildering and confusing the material reason which for so long has been focussed in outer or concrete knowing.

#### THE BAPTISM

In the Hermetic Baptismal Rite the centers of the two great nervous systems, the sympathetic (Water, feminine) and the cerebro-spinal (Fire, masculine), are more definitely linked together by certain psychic energies. This union of Fire and Water in the baptism (not Water alone) is shown in the secret legend about balls of fire which floated on the waters of the Jordan at the time of Jesus' baptism.

Infant humanity was negatively clairvoyant; that is, it possessed the power of extended vision but not under control of its will. This vision was in the nature of the dream-life of children—the waking dream of an imaginative child, which is often so astonishingly vivid and realistic. At that early time the pineal and pituitary glands

in the head were connected with the involuntary or sympathetic system, and the psychic vortices (centers) spun counterclockwise, following negatively the motion of the Earth's axis—from right to left within the aura.

The next work of evolving man was formation of the cerebro-spinal system and brain. The modern aspirant is learning to awaken and develop psychic centers belonging to this system and to rotate them clockwise—from left to right within his own aura.

There are many of these centers awaiting vivification. For this reason the spinal cord has been called the "relaxed string whose pitch must be raised by the exaltation of the element of Fire."

In the Rite of the Baptism positive centers of the body are awakened; the bridge between the Pineal and the Pituitary is formed; the bird of spirit is freed from its prison cage of the body; the conscious Invisible Helper is born. The Dove of the baptism represents completion of this phase of the Great Work.

The Christ Fire in the baptism ascends to the heart center. In the words of the Ancient Wisdom, "This attainment and our material nature comes near to non-material essences."

The early Church called the Degree of Baptism "The Rite of Bringing to Sight"—namely the development of clairvoyance. It was directly connected with the heart center. A statement of Paracelsus is significant in this relation: "The heart is man and the heart is an entire star out of which he is built up. If, therefore, a man is perfect in his heart nothing in the whole light of nature can be hidden from him."

#### THE TEMPTATION

The high Rite of the Baptism is necessarily followed by the temptation in the wilderness, for with the acquisition of supernormal powers comes the opportunity of using them for personal aggrandizement, for executing re-

venge upon enemies, and so forth. When a neophyte is in a wilderness of doubt or possible despair, and is suffering because of many lacks, the Prince of this world appears to tempt him according to his necessities. Such temptations are threefold, pertaining to the physical, emotional, and mental levels. At this point many seekers turn back, to walk with Christ no more.

Physiologically, the three temptations correlate to the three power centers of the Spinal Fire: (1) The sacral plexus, home of the creative Fire, is ruled by Sagittarius. The first temptation is the suggestion to misuse this divine Fire for personal necessities on the sense plane. (2) The heart center is under Leo. The second temptation is the desire to misuse the magnetic life impulses. (3) The third or head center is under Aries; its corresponding temptation is personal ambition and misuse of awakening spiritual powers to dominate others.

There are certain minute nerves in the center near the end of the spine which, as the Fire is drawn upward, become vitalized to act as channels for the *spiritual* (not material) rays of the Sun. Biblically, this is signified in the knot of small cords with which Christ Jesus is portrayed as driving the money lenders from the Temple saying, "This is the house of prayer: but ye have made it a den of thieves."

#### THE TRANSFIGURATION

Immediately following a victory over temptation in the wilderness comes the transfiguration. Fra Angelico portrays the transfigured Christ as standing upon a *transparent rock*, apparently suggesting that the light of His shining has rendered the rock transparent. This concept is especially interesting to a spiritual alchemist. In the Rite of the Transfiguration, the Hermetic or Royal Arch reaches the climax of its perfective work. The human body temple becomes a Philosopher's Stone, for the inner Christ Fire so illumines the body that its wondrous shining can be hid

no longer, but rays out as a resplendent light that even mortal senses cannot fail to see.

Again, there is a correlative activity in the spinal cord, that laboratory of the alchemist. The cord is divisible into three parts, ruled by Mars, Mercury, and the Moon. The Spirit Fire is ruled by Neptune; as it ascends toward the head it vivifies the various sections of the cord. We have previously shown how the two currents, masculine and feminine, ascending through the cord, meet in the heart at the time of baptism. In the transfiguration they complete a circuit and are united in the head. There the "white gluten" of the Eagle and the "red blood" of the Lion are blended in the glorious and priceless gold into which all base metals have been transformed. The Fire now touches the throat center, the link between the mind and the personality, and a flower blooms there. This flower confers the art of healing and the power of speaking the creative Word.

One who is thus transfigured may continue to serve in the world but, definitely, he is not *of* the world. The Fire continues to sweep upward in greater and greater volume, revealing successive worlds or planes in which mighty Angels have their being. Compelled by this new consciousness to live contrary to the accepted code of the material minded, he is frequently at variance with his people and his time. He may be persecuted by enemies and abandoned by loved ones who, like the Disciples of the Master, are asleep to eternal values.

#### GETHSEMANE

Thus he enters Gethsemane, the Garden of Sorrow, to suffer alone. The divine agony of the Christ lay in the fact that, as a glorious Archangel, He found the slow vibrations of a mortal body cramping and painful. The ordinary individual's Rite of Gethsemane consists of suffering incident to lifting his vibrations to the level of the spiritual planes. At each stage many disciples fall by the



wayside. Especially is this true of Gethsemane, where the last vestige of the personal life must be laid aside. Here we meet the Dweller on the Threshold and, if we can, vanquish him. "Not my will, but thine (*Good*), be done" is the keynote of this achievement, for the Dweller is formed around a core of self-will which has attracted evil into the Ego's experience life after life. The Dweller cannot be vanquished unless self-will is first vanquished.

After His agony in the Garden, the Christ was placed upon a raised platform, and a purple mantle cast about him. This platform typifies the head where the creative Fire passes into the sixth center, the pituitary gland. The purple mantle is the auric radiance of this spiritual flower-center in the head. Its light has been compared to the "loveliness of Mary in a sea of nectar." (Mari is bitterness.) Purple is the color of victory through pain. The Bible notes that this was about the sixth hour, the time for the passing over. Here Christ Jesus received the Crown of Thorns, typifying the functioning of the cranial nerves as transmitters of spiritual impulses.

### THE CRUCIFIXION

In Hebrew crucifixion means to *augment a thousand-fold*; and Golgotha means *the place of the skull*. The Great Work which began in the manger of low desire where the beasts fed is now being completed on the Mountain. As the seventh Rose or Lotus blossoms in the head, a bridge of glorious light crosses the third ventricle to connect the pineal and pituitary glands—typified in the union of the Sun and Moon—which is the consummation of the great alchemical marriage. The light of the seventh center has been compared with that of the Sun wedded to the Moon in a glory that never yet lay upon land or sea.

The keywords of the Crucifixion Rite are: "My God, how thou hast glorified me." The last two Initiations, the Resurrection and Ascension, belong largely to the activities of the superhuman planes of spiritual consciousness.

## THE PHILOSOPHER'S STONE

*The subject of the Philosopher's Stone should be and is of deep import to every one. This Stone can only be made by a philosopher for his own use. Each stone has an individuality corresponding to that of the philosopher who has made it; therefore no formula can be given to the world at large, but only to each one as he has gained the right to manufacture it.—Max Heindel.*

True spiritual alchemists have all declared that the *Philosopher's Stone* is *perfected man*; and it has been rightly added by one understanding the mysteries of transmutation that the work of the alchemist is "one of contemplation and not a work of the hands." Or, as the Hermetic sages put it, "O man, know thyself; for within thee are hidden treasures."

The Great Work of alchemy has always been the transmutation of base metals into gold. In this process gold represents spirit; salt, the physical body; the all-important mercury is the mind; luna or silver, the emotional nature; and Saturn, the working of karmic or retributive Law by spirit. To understand this better, be it added that man in a state of humility must especially be associated with lead, the soft dark metal of Saturn.

In the light of the above we may perhaps understand more clearly the following alchemical instructions: "My child, know that the stone called the Philosopher's Stone comes from Saturn, for Saturn is easily dissolved and congealed, that its Mercury may be more easily extracted from it. Luna may easily be made of Saturn in a short time, and in a little time longer Sol may also be made.

Mercury is referred to as the most difficult of all metals used in the Great Work. Mercury, the elusive and intractable, well describes the mind, the most important and, at the same time, the most difficult to control of all the tools of the Spirit. If and when the control of mercury

is accomplished, the remainder of the work "can properly be called mere child's play," according to the Hermetics. Again we go back to the teachings of the great biblical Initiate, St. Paul, who summed up the whole process of the Royal Arch when he said, "Be ye transformed by the renewing (spiritualizing) of your mind."

Purification of the emotional nature, whereby it becomes the living water that Christ admonished His followers to drink, figures as the "living silver of the alchemists." "This is the *aqua vitae* or water of life, which changes the body into white color." This purified life essence, lifted up and united with the spiritualized currents of the head, is the royal fountain wherein the king and queen (the Sun and Moon) are immersed, and in which they find the new life that raises them from the dead, as described in the Hermetic marriage of C.R.C.

We have traced throughout this series the interplay of the positive and negative (masculine and feminine) currents as they operate in body functioning. A perfectly harmonious relation (equilibrium) between these two forces forms the body of the Initiate, termed symbolically the mystic marriage or the wedding of the Sun and Moon. The result of this divine union is attainment of inner harmony that lifts one above and beyond all limitations of disease, poverty, and even death.

In this alchemical process the gold (spirit) which is God and the base metal which is man are conjoined, and man becomes the "living stone"—the keystone of the arch in Masonic phraseology. This androgyne consciousness is represented by the Hermetic cypher *Rebis*, meaning *the two things*. The alchemical Double Mercury bears the same significance.

Albert Pike employs the *Rebis* cypher to represent the Royal Secret of the Thirty-second Degree of the Scottish Rite, the grand climax of Masonic Initiations. He writes: "For as birth, life, exaltation, suffering in fire, and then death were, as it were, ascribed to the Philosopher's Stone in black and gloomy colors, and finally resur-

rection and life in red and other beautiful colors, so the terrestrial stone (man's body) may be compared with the celestial stone (the body of Christ)."

The Path of Regeneration or Illumination is founded upon the cosmic pattern of the birth, life, suffering, death, resurrection and ascension of Christ Jesus. "The making of the Philosopher's Stone is, so to speak, the initiation of Christ."

#### ALCHEMICAL PROCESSES

*The Golden Rule of Occultism: For every step forward in attainment of hidden knowledge, take three in perfecting of character.—Rudolf Steiner.*

Spiritual development means the unfolding of divine powers latent within each human being. Man's own threefold Spirit contains in potentiality all the divine forces which are manifest in the Father-Mother God. The purpose of evolution is that these God-potentialities may be translated into dynamic powers. The reincarnational cycle of every Ego must persist until this work has been accomplished.

The Ego is equipped with certain "tools" with which to work. These are primarily the three bodies, namely, physical, etheric, and desire. Upon these the threefold Spirit operates by means of the mind, refining and beautifying them, setting upon them the stamp of its own unique individuality, and thus "extracting" a certain "essence" from each of them which is indubitably its own. Masonically, this is expressed in the saying that the rough Ashlar has been transmuted into the perfect Cube.

By means of its work upon the threefold body, the Ego extracts the "threefold soul"—which may be simply defined as the ultimate spiritual essence of the Ego's experience in its threefold body. From work in the dense physical body the "conscious soul" is extracted. This means that our work in the material world and in our

physical body is awakening the Creative Will (Divine Spirit) within us. This is our most godlike power. As a result of this work a tiny portion of the actual material substance of the physical body is transmuted into spirit during each lifetime; this we carry with us into the heaven world after death to use as a nucleus for our next physical body. In time the entire body is immortalized. The rule for this work in the body is the Golden Rule, to which an aspirant's every deed must be made to conform.

Simultaneously, the Ego sensitizes its etheric vehicle, "extracting" therefrom the "intellectual soul," which is especially connected with the mystery of the soul body and, in one sense, IS that soul body. This is done by the constant repetition of high spiritual thoughts, and is shown by increased refinement in its daily life. Development of this intellectual soul is shown in highly civilized persons by a keen and cultivated esthetic sense.

The soul body is the apparel of the bridal pair, as described by C.R.C. It is the "seamless robe" of the Master, the "pearl of great price" of Matthew's Gospel, the "ruby" of Solomon, and the Great White Work of the alchemist. It is also the White Rose of the Rosicrucians. Without it new birth through Initiation is impossible of attainment. This is clearly exemplified in the biblical Parable of the Wedding Feast where one not clothed in a wedding garment was cast into darkness and there was "weeping and gnashing of teeth."

Work on the physical body correlates with the masculine pole of spirit, Creative Will; work on the etheric, with the feminine Creative Imagination, Love. Work of the third aspect of spirit is with the desire body, and correlates with the masculine and feminine forces in equilibrium.

The work of the Divine Spirit (Creative Will) on the body spiritualizes it; the Life Spirit (Creative Imagination), working in the etheric body, spiritualizes and organizes the etheric senses and opens up contact with fourth dimensional realms. The work of the Human Spirit upon

the emotions carries the process further, conferring a power by which the Ego can function in the astral world.

Spiritualization of the mind is both the beginning and the end of the above process. Without some degree of spiritualization of the mind no alchemical work is possible. This, therefore, precedes, but it also follows, for after the three lower vehicles are worked upon and the soul or essence extracted, the mind must be worked upon still further so that the archetypal world can be penetrated and laid open to the experience of the Ego. Then thought-forms are revealed in color and sound (the mental plane being the realm of sound as the astral is the realm of color), and the power of the Word revealed in its full significance. Thus the Initiate possesses a ninefold vehicle for more perfect manifestation of God-given faculties; for the soul is also a kind of body. The formula is: a threefold Spirit, a threefold soul, a threefold body, joined by the link of mind. Wherefore Paul declared, "now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be."

We have emphasized more than once that all true spiritual development must have its foundation in the conservation of the life force which ascends from the "sacred" center at the base of the spine. The limitations of poverty, disease, and death have come upon us by reason of our misuse of this force, symbolically expressed in the Bible as partaking of the fruit of the tree of knowledge. New birth through regeneration can occur only as we conserve the life force *and lift it to the head*, where it becomes what the Bible refers to as the "tree of life"; and the fruits of this tree are the glittering jewel-like centers previously spoken of.

This conserved life force is the Elixir Vitae of the Alchemists, the Water of Life, and it is no other than that Water which Christ spoke of to the Samaritan woman. Ascetics of the orthodox churches have laid great emphasis upon celibacy and chastity as a means of conserving the life essence; but they are only part of the process. For there is but ONE life force in all the universe, though it

branches out in many channels and centers. The first and earliest out-branching of this force is in the nerve center which governs the organs of generation; here, therefore, must be the first overcoming. Even as the lily puts out its blossoms and the lowest blossom falls away first, then, successively, the other blossoms on the stalk until the topmost blossom alone remains, so is there a time when the dead and useless blooms must be plucked away.

The force does not rise from one center to another in completely separate stages. The upward rush covers the entire circuit, but the greatest volume reaches only the most active center of the chain. A small part of the lifted force will always reach the topmost branch of the Tree of Life, but the Water of Life must run upward in a powerful current and not in a mere thread before real unfoldment begins.

Thus, in addition to a life of sexual purity, there must be purity of thought, word, and deed. This precious elixir of life is dissipated in many ways, chief among them being the squandering of the essence in sexual indulgences; but much is also wasted in loss of temper, malicious gossip, and frivolous conversation. Some control must be set upon all the wasteful activities of daily life before the serpent Fire can begin to stir. Sensual indulgence must be restrained before the first blossom can emit its ruby fire; the flower center in the throat cannot unfurl so long as the life force is wasted in idle speaking; and so with the other centers wherein this life force is specialized to their own particular functions.

When the Rite of Initiation is passed, this is the power by which the Initiate propels himself from his body when exchanging the body terrestrial for the body celestial. Therefore, unless it has been conserved and transmuted he can never be worthy of a master's wages or be able "to travel in foreign countries." The importance of this work has long been undervalued and neglected by even the most sincere and devoted of spiritual aspirants; yet this stone which the builders reject must become the head of the

corner (the new body built through regeneration).

The gradual uprising of the serpent Fire and the Elixir Vitae is not to be thought of as an isolated process; it is accompanied by—indeed, is caused by—the spiritualization of the mind, the purification of desires, discipline of memory, and a benevolent but absolute control of the body, all of which must become responsive to the lightest impact of spirit. This achieved, the conflict no longer rages between the Ego and its personality; there are not “two souls housed within my breast,” as Faust lamented, but one only, in undivided reign. The desire body is so purified that the Ego is conscious while its dense body sleeps and, in the words of Paracelsus. “the sidereal body soars up to its father and has converse with the stars.”

This is what is meant by the occultist’s “citizen of two worlds,” the “Walker of the Skies.” His service continues through the entire twenty-four hours of the day. Every call for help from inner and outer planes finds him ready to respond. Time, space, and substance are no barrier for he has conquered them all. Lifted above the usual human limitations of poverty, disease, and death, he is at last qualified to enter into, and to know, the full and abiding joy of the Master Builder or Master Alchemist.

As Paracelsus has written, “The true alchemist follows the procedure of the Great Architect of the universe in the construction of all that exists in nature. Separates light from darkness, forms his firmament from the separation of the waters which are above from the waters which are below, and performs successfully point by point the entire sequence of the creative act.”

As the alchemical work in the body nears completion, the head is crowned with fiery radiance in many colors. The pons of the medulla becomes a veritable Tree of Life in miniature, bearing fruit for the healing of all nations (the atomic content of the entire body). The sparkling stream of white-gold radiance floods the third ventricle, transforming it into the Marriage Chamber as described above, whereupon there “follows the greatest Arcanum,” says



Paracelsus, "that is the supercelestial marriage of the soul, consummately prepared and washed by the blood of the Lamb with His own purified and shining body. This is the true supercelestial marriage by which life is prolonged to the last and predestined day. This is the marriage of Sol and Luna through the sperm of Mercury."

The Stations of the Cross, fourteen in number (twice seven), also represent the alchemical journey of the soul to God, by which the White Stone is made.

The result of this work is that the body becomes the Living Stone, as was Peter when Christ declared: "Thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church." The implication here is that all men are to be this rock, not Peter alone. Paracelsus gives the seven steps which culminate in this Great Work as follows:

1. *Calcination*. A naked, strong fire exposed to air; the most important and most difficult.

2. *Sublimation*. Exaltation, elevation.

3. *Solution*. Separation of the pure from the impure. The spiritual is raised from the corporeal after the process has been repeated many times.

4. *Putrefaction*. Digestion and circulation. A mystery known to few. A process by which all things are changed from original form into something else, as food in the body becomes both waste and essence. Many good things by putrefaction are made unwholesome. Many evils and poisons are made clean and pure. Putrefaction always brings forth great effort whether the effects be good or ill. "Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit." In other words, death to the old and birth to the new—one of God's greatest and highest miracles in the macrocosm and microcosm or within nature and man.

5. *Distillation*. Ascension, fixation. Oil and water separate; all that is sharp and bitter becomes as sweet as honey and manna.

6. *Coagulation*. There are two processes involved herein, one airy and cold, the other fiery and hot. (The

blending of the transmuted essence of nerve fluid and blood previously described.)

7. *Tincture*. The noblest essence with which bodies either metallic or human are tinged. For the modern aspirant this tincture is the new birth or spiritual illumination in Christ. Paracelsus, in writing of it, says: "The body touched with Tincture no longer lives in its old form, but like a metal is transmuted into another. Saturn has not in itself its old quality, but the quality of the Tincture itself. No longer do bodies touched with Tincture exist in the former life from which they were transmuted, but far nobler, better and more healthy is the condition than in its native origin."

Bonaventure describes the *Seven Steps of Contemplation*, David of Ausbury the *Seven Steps of Prayer*. Jacob Boehme has many references to the *Seven Mystical Steps*.

In the *Rosarium* of Johanes Daustenius, the seven steps are enumerated in the following manner. (1) And then the corpus is a cause that the water is retained. (2) The water is a cause of preserving the oil so that fire does not ignite it. (3) The oil is the cause of retaining the Tincture. (4) The Tincture is the cause of the colors appearing. (5) The color is a cause of showing the white. (6) The white is a cause of keeping every volatile thing. (7) From being no longer volatile.

## TRANSMUTATION

Perhaps the most important work for the student who aspires to attainment of true first hand knowledge is the work of transmutation, the process employed in the cosmos for producing various phases of refinement in all forms of nature. Transmutation applies not only to the realms of thought relative to man but manifests equally throughout the physical body in ways not generally conceived.

In proportion to our comprehension of the forces of transmutation do we really come to appreciate the unend-

ing wonders of the human body-temple and lift our voices in unison with the Greek poet as he sings:

*“Many a wonder lives and moves  
But the wonder of all is man.”*

The forces of transmutation have both an ascending and a descending arc. Man was originally a spiritual being, but he gradually descended into a relatively impermanent phase of material existence. Rudolf Steiner emphasizes this fact in his lecture series on *The World of the Senses and the World of Spirit*, wherein he states: “Man has undergone a great coarsening in his nature.” He notes further that while man lived in the super-physical state the spiritualized forces of Imagination, Inspiration, and Intuition formed an important part of his vehicle. However, with the inrush of matter, the spiritual substance of Imagination, which had been furnished him by the Elohim, was crystallized into bones. Inspiration, which had its seat in rhythm and harmony, was transformed into muscular substance. The forces of Intuition took on the semblance of nerves. “These high gifts of the gods,” Dr. Steiner continues, “have all become rigid in matter . . . Matter is thus something with which we are filled but which does not belong to us. It is because we bear this physical matter that we know physical death . . . When the power in the bones (which is material) gains the upper hand, the bones become incapable of life. It is the same with the muscles and nerves. As soon as the matter in the bones, muscles, and nerves gain the upper hand over Imagination, Inspiration, and Intuition, and is able to break asunder, in that moment must man lay down his physical body.”

Herein is found the secret of the wondrous power of the transmutation. Man is now learning how to use the forces of Imagination (the image-making faculty), Inspiration (the breath of spirit), and Intuition (the voice of spirit). He is learning that these are powerful forces

within himself by which matter can be transmuted into spirit, and that when this is accomplished *he need not die*.

This is the glory message of the incoming New Age whose theme is *Transmutation* and whose keynote is *Immortality*. The last enemy to be overcome is death, declared St. Paul. He it was who gave the further admonition that we lay aside the terrestrial body while still resident upon earth, that we be clothed in the body celestial.

In this connection it is significant to note that the celebrated English mystic and poet-painter, William Blake, called Imagination, Inspiration, and Intuition other names for God. "Imagination," he wrote, "is the divine body in every man." It would be well if everyone incorporated within his own heart the triumphant soul song of this man, one of Earth's Illumined, for in the following is to be found the true recipe for spiritual rebirth through regeneration. "May we be transported," says Blake, "by way of awakened Imagination, recognition of worldly life as a living death, annihilation of selfhood, and regeneration; so may we be transported into the eternal Imagination, in which our soul is at one with God."

Finally, in recapitulation be it noted that a part of man's evolutionary equipment is impermanent and transitory. All factors pertaining to the life of the senses will have disappeared by the end of the Earth Period. Consequently, Egos which have chosen to follow the path of the sense life throughout this great evolutionary Earth cycle, and have thus forfeited opportunities for spiritual progress, will, under karmic law, be compelled to retrace their steps during another cosmic cycle.

There are two paths, one of the senses and one of the spirit. Man possesses free will and so can choose the way he will go. But that choice brings repercussions, not alone for one life but throughout a humanly incalculable span of time. Dr. Steiner says: "We begin to know that good is creative in the World-all, something that always and everywhere belongs to the world that is arising and coming into being. And of the bad we feel how it everywhere shows

itself as a process of the outpourings of death and decay. . . . With every wrong thing we do we become a helper of the destroying angel. We ourselves take his scythe and share in the processes of death and decay. Therefore, it is necessary to know what good and evil mean and to recognize them in the world, the one as a creative and the other as a death-dealing principle."

Every activity of man sets its impress upon the psychic envelope of the Earth. This applies to thought, the spoken word, and the physical deed. If these activities are constructive, their emanations are absorbed by, and become a component part of, the world soul. If, on the contrary, these activities are negative and destructive, their emanations become dark and sinister currents that remain in the astral realms until the Ego responsible for their creation assumes the task of liquidation.

It is only as we realize the full import of the preceding statement that we begin to understand the real meaning of transmutation and its far-reaching significance in relation to our well-being. We are individually responsible for the reaction upon Earth of our every thought, word, and deed. Biblically, this truth is given in Matthew's Gospels: "By thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned."

The transmutative power within man centers in the forces previously referred to as Imagination, Inspiration, and Intuition. It is by the constructive use of the image-building faculty united with the breath (currents) and the voice (power) of spirit that the miracle of transmutation may be effected, a miracle which clears our karmic sheet and thus immeasurably accelerates our spiritual evolution.

Endowed with these powers, we learn to transform evil into good, hatred into love, darkness into light. Transmutation is the wonder key that opens the door to at-one-ment with that Light which is the Light of the World. By the magic of transmutation we reach the height that is the supreme goal of earthly life: to "walk in the light as he is in the light, (and) have fellowship one with another."

# NEW AGE BIBLE INTERPRETATION

*By* CORINNE HELINE

## OLD

**TESTAMENT: VOLUME I** — The Hexateuch: Genesis, Book of Eternal Beginnings; Deuteronomy, the Higher Law; Joshua, Son of Initiate Wisdom; Leviticus, the Book of Law.

**VOLUME II** — Books of Initiation: King Solomon and the Temple Builders, Samuel, Kings, Chronicles, Ecclesiastes, Ruth, Judges, Job, Masonry & Eso. Christianity.

**VOLUME III** — Completing Study of Old Testament: The Promise in China, India, Egypt, Chaldea, Persia, Greece, Israel; Books of the Prophets; Book of Daniel; The Great Apocalypse of the Old Testament.

## NEW

**TESTAMENT: VOLUME IV (I)** — Preparation for Coming of the Light of the World: Prelude to the Gospels: Life and Mysteries of the Blessed Virgin; Birth and early Life of Jesus; Preparatory Years and Beginning of Christ Ministry.

**VOLUME V (II)** — Healing Miracles of Christ Jesus; Parables of Christ's Ministry; The Transfiguration to the Passion; Culmination of the Ministry; The Passiontide; Christian Initiatory Teachings.

**VOLUME VI (III)** — Portraits of the Disciples; Book of Acts; Fruitage of the Ministry; The Epistles of the Disciples; Saul of Tarsus; Journeys of Paul; Letters to the Churches; Disciples of Paul's Ministry; Epistles from Rome; The Alchemical Twelve; Book of Revelation.

**VOLUME VII** — Mystery of the Christos: Clarifies significance of the Lord Christ's fourfold life and mission; Mysteries of Christmas and Easter; The Path of Holiness through 12 Zodiacal Gates; Cycle of the Year with Christ.

*Send for Complete List of Prices*

**THE ROSICRUCIAN FELLOWSHIP**

P. O. Box 713, Oceanside, California, U.S.A.

# The Rosicrucian Cosmo-Conception

By MAX HEINDEL

An inspiring book containing investigated facts which bridge the seeming gap between Religion and Science; facts that thrill the modern intellect and comfort the old-fashioned heart.

This is the

textbook

used in the

Rosicrucian

Philosophy

Correspondence

Courses

702 pages, with Topical Index of 57 pages and Alphabetical Index of 95 pages.

—  
Paper Bound

607 pages. Identical with cloth, but has Topical Index only.

## PARTIAL CONTENTS

Visible and invisible worlds.  
Man, and method of evolution.  
Spirit, soul, and body.  
Thought, memory, soulgrowth.  
Conscious, subconscious, and superconscious mind.  
Science of death, the beneficence of Purgatory, life in Heaven.  
Preparation for rebirth.  
The Law of Consequence.  
The Relation of man to God.  
Genesis and evolution of our solar system; Chaos the seed-ground of Cosmos.  
Birth of the planets: planetary Spirits.  
The moon an eighth sphere of retrogression.  
Separation of the sexes.  
Lucifer Spirits and the Fall.  
Sixteen paths to destruction.  
Christ and His mission.  
The mystery of Golgotha and the cleansing blood.  
Future development and Initiation.  
The method of acquiring first-hand knowledge.  
Western methods for Western people.

*Price List on Request*

THE ROSICRUCIAN FELLOWSHIP  
*Oceanside, California, U.S.A.*

# **SIMPLIFIED SCIENTIFIC ASTROLOGY**

*By* MAX HEINDEL

*Complete textbook on the art of erecting a horoscope.*

## **CONTENTS**

The planets, the Seven Spirits Before the Throne; Time and Place as Factors in Calculation; Signs and Houses; Rising Sign and The Twelve Houses; Calculating Positions of Planets; the Aspects; Making the Index of a Horoscope; Ephemeris—Sample Pages; Philosophic Encyclopedia; Table of Logarithms; Table of Houses—Sample Pages; Tables of Planetary Hours; Index.

Cloth Bound—198 Pages

# **ASTROLOGY AND THE DUCTLESS GLANDS**

*By* AUGUSTA FOSS HEINDEL

While authentic physical data are given, the reader will be specially interested in sharing the author's firsthand observation of the functioning of certain of the ductless glands.

## **CONTENTS**

Introduction by Manly P. Hall. Four Chapters—Polarian Epoch; Garden of Eden; Two Ductless Glands, the Pituitary Body, the Pineal Gland; The Spinal Gas, Spiritual Observation, Astrological Discernment.

Art Paper Cover—34 Pages

**THE ROSICRUCIAN FELLOWSHIP**

*Oceanside, California, U.S.A.*